This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

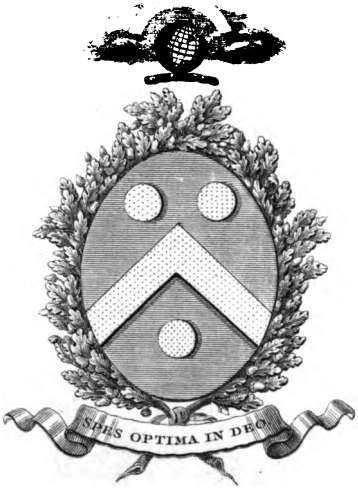
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

Hope Essays 208.



John Thomas Hope.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

CHRYSAL;

OR,

THE ADVENTURES

OF

A GUINEA.

WHEREIN ARE EXHIBITED

VIEWS OF SEVERAL STRIKING SCENES,

WITH

CURIOUS AND INTERESTING ANECDOTES,

OF THE

MOST NOTED PERSONS IN EVERY RANK OF LIFE,

WHOSE HANDS IT PASSED THROUGH,

IN AMERICA, ENGLAND, HOLLAND, GERMANY AND PORTUGAL.

BY AN ADEPT.

——Hold the Mirror up to Nature,
To shew Vice its own Image, Virtue its own Likeness,
And the very Age and Body of the Times,
His Form and Pressure. SHAKSPEARE.

Qui capit, ille facit.

A NEW EDITION.

VOL. I.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR J. F. AND C. RIVINGTON; G. ROBINSON; T. CADELL; T. EVANS; AND R. BALDWIN.

M DCC LXXXIII.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

ADVERTISEMENT

Prefixed to the Second Edition.

THE very favourable reception, which the former edition of this work, mutilated and imperfect as it was, met with from the public, has encouraged the editor to use every possible means, for the recovery of the rest of the manuscript.

Such an attempt was necessarily tedious, troublesome, and expensive, in going to all the customers of the chandlers shops, where it was first met with, prevailing upon them to search cup-boards, holes, and corners, wherever they might possibly have laid up any thing that was wrapped in it, and purchasing the scraps which could be found; for such an enquiry made them naturally imagine, that the papers were of some considerable value, and of course demand an extravagant price for them.

His own trouble and expence he thinks well rewarded by the many most curious and interesting parts of the work, which he had the good fortune to recover; and he hopes the public will excuse the una-

 voidable

Digitized by Google

voidable delay of this impreſſion, on the ſame account.

The parts thus recovered, he has inſerted in their proper places without any oſtentatious mark or note; and tho' they amount to very near a third part of the whole, as it now ſtands, and would have been amply ſufficient to have made another volume; to evince the ſincerity of his grateful deſire to give pleaſure to his readers, and acquit himſelf of all ſuſpicion of mercenary deſign, he has added them to this edition, without enhancing the price.

He had flattered himſelf, that the candid account of the manner in which this work came into his hands, which he prefixed to the former edition, would have obviated every inſinuation of its being levelled at particular characters; but every puny critic was ſo fond of ſhewing his ſagacity, by finding out reſemblances, and ſo zealous in ſupport of his conjectures, that the editor's honeſt intention was in a great meaſure diſappointed.

The diſingenuity and abſurdity of this is evident! In painting a number of faces, tho'

Digitized by Google

tho' merely from the artiſt's imagination, if he deſigns well, and imitates nature with judgment, it is impoſſible but many features will have a likeneſs to many perſons, whom he may have never ſeen or thought of, as they are all drawn from the ſame prototype with theirs.

This is the reaſon of the reſemblance betwéen particular perſons; and as juſtly might it be ſaid, that, wherever this appears, the parties muſt be brothers, as that in a general deſcription of nature, every feature that happens to reſemble any particular perſon, was drawn from him.

Between theſe accidental reſemblances of nature, and the deſigned ones of art, there is always this difference, that the latter bear in every part, whereas the others hit only upon one or two particular features. Thus HOGARTH, or HONE, ſhall take off ſuch a likeneſs, not only of the features and ſhape, but alſo of the air and ſentimental expreſſion of the whole face and perſon, that the niceſt eye ſhall not find the leaſt difference, between the work of the pencil, and that of the hand of nature; whereas there never was ſuch a reſemblance in any two inſtances of the latter,

Digitized by Google

ter, that there was not ſome difference, that immediately and eſſentially diſtinguiſhed them from each other.

This, invariably juſt, obſervation will to every candid mind, vindicate this work from the moſt diſtant imputation of aiming at particular characters as in the reſemblances, which have been moſt confidently alledged, there are many features ſo utterly unlike, many differences ſo eſſentially irreconcileable with the fancied originals, that the injuſtice of ſuch a charge muſt inſtantly appear.

There is alſo another proof of this performance's being a work of mere imagination, which will ſcarce be diſputed by thoſe who may not attend to the force of this reaſoning, juſt and concluſive, as it is; which is, that it was publiſhed a conſiderable time, before many of the events, which it ſeems moſt particularly to deſcribe, happenned; ſuch for inſtance, as the attempt of the *Dutch* in *India*, the forbidding to attempt influencing parliamentary elections, and many others, which, the judicious reader muſt be ſenſible, there was not the leaſt reaſon to direct the moſt diſtant expectation of.

March 1, 1761.

Digitized by Google

TO THE

RIGHT HONOURABLE

WILLIAM PITT, Esq;

&c. &c. &c.

SIR,

THE Publiſher of theſe papers is ſenſible, that the time devoted to the care of nations is too valuable to be ſpared to the peruſal of them, yet he ſhould think himſelf guilty of a breach of the general gratitude, which, at this time, ſwells every honeſt heart, in *Britain*, if he omitted to lay at your feet a work, in which every occaſion of diſplaying the bleſſings of a good adminiſtration appears to have been ſought with pleaſure, and dwelt upon with judgment.

The genius of my author was evidently ſo averſe to adulation, that it would be doing him the ſevereſt injuſtice, to join any thing to his work, which even envy could poſſibly pervert to ſuch a motive, by inſinuating, that the pictures he draws, in many places, of national good conduct, and

Digitized by Google

the happy effects of it, are a panegyric on preſent, not a repreſentation of imaginary ſcenes.

A ſenſe of this precludes me from the pleaſure of illuſtrating his remarks with particular inſtances; but, in return for that painful ſelf-denial, I muſt be indulged in a profeſſion of the joy, with which I (as muſt every *Briton* whoſe heart feels for his country) congratulate myſelf, on my happy fate in living under an adminiſtration in which the flights of imagination of a viſionary recluſe, dead ſo many years ago, may be taken for a relation of the real events of the preſent times.

Here my addreſs to Mr. PITT muſt ſtop! But nothing can ever ſtop my prayers to Heaven for the preſervation and happineſs of a life, on whoſe labours, the welfare, not only of this mighty empire, but alſo of the greater part of *Europe*, do now ſo eminently depend.

A Briton.

April 20, 1760.

Digitized by Google

PREFACE

TO THE

FIRST EDITION,

BY THE PUBLISHER.

TO acquit myſelf of the ſuſpicion of preſuming to aim at particular characters in the following work, ſhould any fancied likeneſs be thought to direct an application; as well as to do juſtice to the real author of it; I think it my duty to make known the manner by which it happened to come into my hands.

As I was walking one morning, laſt ſummer, along Whitechapel, I was obliged to take ſhelter from a ſhower of rain in a cottage near the turnpike. The family were at breakfaſt, at their tea, and, as the rain continued, I had leiſure to reflect on the advantages of commerce, which thus, in a manner, joins the oppoſite extremities of the earth, by bringing their products together: at the ſame time, that the variety in the equipage of the tea-table, or indeed, ſtool, on which 'there was nothing of a piece,'

Digitized by Google

ſuggeſted a juſt ridicule on the vanity of luxury.

This laſt reflection was extended to all the purſuits of man, on the ſight of a piece of written paper, that ſerved inſtead of a plate to hold their butter,—'Who knows '(thought I) but the writer of this be-'ſtowed time and care upon it, and pro-'miſed himſelf both profit and fame, in 'reward of his labour?'

This thought raiſed a curioſity to look at the paper, which, by this time, was ſcraped quite clean. I therefore, after a few words of converſation, to introduce my requeſt, deſired leave to ſee it, which was readily granted, when I was ſurprized to find my conjecture, as I imagined, confirmed, by its appearing to be part of ſome regular work.

Curioſity had now a ſtronger motive, than idle gratification! I aſked where they had got that paper; and on their telling me, at the chandler's ſhop next door, though this diſcouraged me a good deal, I reſolved to purſue my enquiry, and went to the ſhop, as if for ſome ſnuff, which as I expected,

Digitized by Google

expected, was given me on a piece of the same paper.

The rain still giving me a pretence for delaying there, I entered into discourse with the woman, and among other idle questions, asked her where she usually got paper to wrap her wares in, to which she answered, 'Sometimes from the public offices, and sometimes from the booksellers and printers? and, when she was disappointed at those places, she was forced to buy brown paper, which was much dearer; though, at present, she made use of some old *stuff* that had lain a great while lumbering her garret, having belonged to a lodger of her mother's, who died many years ago.'

I then changed the discourse, for fear she should perceive my design; but presently seeing her going to tear more, for somebody else that came in, I could not forbear any longer, but offered her brown paper for all the written paper she had, *as that was most proper for some work I designed*, which she readily agreed to, and sold me her whole stock for eighteen-pence.

This

Digitized by Google

This adventure put an end to my walk, ſo I took the firſt coach that went by, and hurried home to examine my purchaſe, which I found to conſiſt of a number of fragments, upon various ſubjects, whether originally left unfiniſhed, or torn thus in the chandler's ſhop, it was impoſſible to ſay: and, among the reſt, the following work, which ſeemed to have undergone a different, though not much better fate, being blotted in many places, often paragraphs, and ſometimes whole pages being eraſed; and, what was worſt, this havoc was made in the moſt curious and entertaining part of the whole, the *philoſophy of the nature and agency of ſpirits.*

The oddity of this collection, made me reſolve to try if I could learn any thing of the author, from the woman of the ſhop, where I had made my purchaſe; accordingly, I called upon her one evening, as if merely accident, and ſending for a pint of wine, to ſet her tongue a going, I no ſooner hinted my deſire, than ſhe directly gave me the following account, which I ſhall repeat as nearly as poſſible, in her own words, ſhortening it only of expletive exclamations and repetitions.

'My

Digitized by Google

'My father (said she) dying young, and 'leaving his family but poorly, my mo-'ther took this shop to help her to bring 'up three children, of whom I, the eldest, 'was but five years old. The times be-'ing hard, she was obliged to make every 'honest shift, and therefore took in lodg-'ers, and, among the rest, an elderly man 'who rented the garret to sleep in, and a 'little turret in the garden, which he fit-'ted up for himself for a workshop: but 'what business he followed she never knew, 'as he let no body see him at work; nor 'did she trouble herself to enquire, as he 'always paid her punctually: but she ima-'gined he was a smith of some sort, from 'the quantities of charcoal he burned, and 'the constant blowing of his bellows.

'In this place he spent all his time, of-'ten not quitting it for whole days and 'nights together, till hunger has forced 'him to crawl like a starved rat out of his 'hole, to get a bit of victuals.

'At first my mother was uneasy at this, 'and imagining he must be *out of his mind*, 'or troubled in conscience, she spoke about 'him to a worthy gentleman, a clergyman,

'that

'that lived in the neighbourhood; but he 'coming to see him at a time when he had 'a clean shirt on, and had eat his victuals, 'and slept regularly for some time before, 'his discourse was so sensible and pleasant, 'that the doctor could not help telling him 'the cause of his visit, as a joke at my 'mother, to whom he said, when he was 'going away, that, so far from being mad, 'he believed her lodger was the best scho-'lar in the whole parish.

'My mother's good nature had like to 'have lost her her lodger, for, as soon as 'the doctor was gone, he gave her warn-'ing, but upon her promising never to be 'guilty of the like indiscretion again, nor 'to trouble herself any farther about him, 'than just to give him what he should call 'for, he consented to stay.

'From that time he lived among us as 'unnoticed as he could desire, following 'his business without disturbance from any 'one, nor appearing to give himself the 'least trouble about that of any other per-'son living, except it was me, whom he 'taught to read, and said he would make 'his heir. An unhappy heirship, I am 'sure, for me; for it hindered my marry-

'ing

'ing *Jack Twiſt* the rope-maker, who is 'the toppingeſtman in all *Radcliff highway*, 'and then offered to take me in my ſhift.

'But there's no help for that now! 'Luck is all! to be ſure we thought he 'muſt be ſome extraordinary man, for he 'never wanted money, and then we uſed 'to hear him talking to himſelf ſometimes, 'as if all the world was his own, of *build-* 'ing cõlleges, and churches, and houſes, and 'altering St. Paul's, and I do not know 'what great things; and, one day in par- 'ticular, I remember he ſaid, before us all, 'that before ſeven years, he would hire, 'an army, that ſhould drive the *Pope* and 'the *Devil* (Lord bleſs us) out of *Rome*; 'for to be ſure, he would talk before us, 'as if we could not hear him, as we would 'alſo do any thing before him, as freely 'as if he was a cat or a dog! Well, as I 'was ſaying, it was no wonder, to be ſure, 'that ſuch ignorant poor folks as we, 'ſhould think much of him, eſpecially af- 'ter what the doctor ſaid, and accordingly 'built great hopes upon his promiſes.

'He went on thus for near twenty years, 'no ſoul ever coming near him, nor he 'going out, above once or twice in a year,

'and

'and then not ſtaying above an hour or 'two at a time.

'At length his health began to break 'very much, which made my mother of- 'ten ſpeak to him, not to work ſo hard, 'for he had been with us ſo long, and 'was ſo quiet, and paid ſo honeſtly, that 'we all loved him as if he was our father. 'But her advice was all to no purpoſe; 'he ſtill went on, bidding her not trouble 'herſelf, nor be afraid about him. But 'this did not ſatisfy her; and one day, 'when he had been locked up, from the 'morning before, without having any vic- 'tuals or going to bed, ſhe reſolved to 'break through his orders and call him to 'dinner.

'When ſhe came to the turret, which 'he called his *laboratory*, ſhe tapped gent- 'ly at the door; but receiving no anſwer, 'nor hearing any noiſe within, ſhe was ſo 'frighted, that ſhe called me, to fetch the 'kitchen poker, with which we made a 'ſhift to force it open, when we found the 'poor man ſtretched at his length upon the 'floor, to all appearance dead *.

* See Vol. II. Page 299.

'This

'This ſhocked us greatly; but we did 'not alarm the neighbours, as we imagin- 'ed there were things of value there, that 'might be miſplaced, or taken away in 'the confuſion: we therefore raiſed him 'up ourſelves, and after a little while, per- 'ceiving ſigns of life, carried him in, and 'laid him in our own bed, and, pouring 'ſome drops into his mouth and noſe, at 'length brought him to himſelf; when his 'firſt care was to enquire for the key of 'the turret, and whether any one elſe had 'been there, nor any thing in it ſtirred: 'our anſwers ſatisfying him, he ſeemed 'quite eaſy, and in a little time recovered, 'to all appearance as well as ever.

'From this time, he changed his way of 'life a good deal; and though he was 'much in the turret, which we obſerved 'he ever after called his *ſtudy*, and not his '*laboratory*, he never ſat up whole nights 'in it, as before, nor bought any more 'charcoal, nor even oil for his lamp, but 'went to bed orderly when we did.

'But this change came too late; for 'about ſix months after, we found him 'one morning dead in his bed; though he

'had

Digitized by Google

'had been as cheary in the evening before,
'as he had for a long time.

'This was a great ſurprize and concern
'to us! But what avails grief? We muſt
'all die, and he was a very old man. As
'ſoon as we were certain that he was dead,
'the firſt thing my mother and I did, was
'to go to the turret, impatient enough to
'take poſſeſſion of our heirſhip; where,
'Lord help our poor heads! did we find
'only a few great old books, and thoſe pa-
'pers you got; the very bellows and tools,
'and pots that we ſaw there before, being
'all gone, and no more ſign of a work-
'ſhop to be ſeen, than if it was not the
'ſame place we had been in ſix months
'before. What he could have done with
'his things we could not imagine, for we
'never obſerved him to carry them out,
'ſo that we concluded he muſt have burn-
'ed them.

'This was a ſore diſappointment to me,
'not to mention the loſs to my mother, to
'whom he owed a quarter's rent, beſides
'an account of near twenty ſhillings in the
'ſhop; and ſeven ſhillings and two-pence
'half-penny was all the money in his poc-
'ket,

Digitized by Google

'ket, nor did we ever find one penny more 'after him, tho' we ſearched cloſe enough! '——Well! patience is a remedy for all 'things, but death; we were forced to 'ſubmit; though I cannot help grieving, 'when I think of it, to this day, eſpeci-'ally when I ſee *Peg Sprout*, the green-'woman's daughter from *Wapping*, that '*Jack Twiſt* married out of deſpair, when 'I refuſed him, ride by, in her chaiſe, like 'a lady; and it is now thirty years ago! '——No! let me ſee! it will be exactly 'twenty-nine years come next *Michaelmas*; 'I am ſure I have reaſon to remember it 'well, for my poor mother took it ſo to 'heart, that ſhe never held up her head 'after, till it finiſhed her, in about nine 'years; tho' I cannot ſay but ſomething 'elſe might have helped, for ſhe took cru-'elly to drinking drams, tho' as ſhe began 'it, to comfort her for this misfortune, it 'was all owing to that; that poor ſiſter '*Bet*, too.'——

I was obliged to interrupt her here, by aſking her, what kind of a perſon he was, or ſhe would have gone on to give me the hiſtory of her whole family, to which ſhe anſwered thus: 'What ſort of a man? 'I'll

Digitized by Google

'I'll tell you then, for I think I see him before my eyes, this minute. He was a tall thin man, above six feet high, and no thicker than a watchman's staff, as I may say; then his constant leaning over his work bent his long back like a bow, especially as he had no belly to keep it up, for he lived almost upon nothing, so that, when he walked, the length of his legs, and his great stoop, made him look as if he had no body at all. As for his face, it was as long as my arm, and not broader than the edge of my hand; his eyes were sunk half a foot into his head, and always covered with spectacles: his nose was hooked over his mouth, as his chin turned up an handful to meet that: and the constant toasting, over the charcoal, had shriveled up his skin, so that his whole face looked as if it was coveered with scorched parchment.—His dress (for I never knew him have but one) was a black coat, with little buttons all over it: which being made for him while he stood upright, now that he stooped so much, hung down to his ancles: a broad leather belt, that kept his coat about him; a cloak, which he hung upon his shoulders, but was so worn,

'that

Digitized by Google

'that it ſhewed his ſkeleton through every
'part of it; and an old high-crowned hat.
'In ſhort, he had ſo little of the appearance
'of a creature of this world, in his looks
'or dreſs, or whenever he went out in
'the day-time, the mob all gathered about
'him, and hooted him home, juſt as the
'little birds do an owl: and ſome of our
'wicked neighbours, when any accident
'has happened, have often threatened to
'take him up, and *dip* him for a witch,
'tho' I am perſuaded that was nothing but
'wickedneſs and malice, and that he knew
'no more harm than a baby.'

My curioſity being thus ſatisfied as to the author, there was but one thing more that I deſired to know, and that was, how thoſe papers came to have ſo many blots made in them, which, by the difference of the ink, I could ſee was done long ſince the firſt writing? To which ſhe anſwered, that, ſome time after the old man's death, her mother let his apartment to one that called himſelf a clergyman, and was a great ſcholar, and uſed to make almanacs, and other books; that he had looked over thoſe papers, and, ſhe believed, taken out ſuch as he liked, and done what he pleaſed with the reſt, for they ſet no regard on them;

and

Digitized by Google

and particularly ſhe remembered to have heard him ſay, that he would make ſomething of one of them; but ſhe believed he found it would not do, for he ſoon after left their houſe, and, joining with thoſe methodiſts that were juſt then come up, went away with them, preaching about the country.

I thought it but reaſonable to reward the good woman's expence of breath, with half a crown, and ſo took my leave, though with a ſecret reſolution to give her half the profit, if there ariſes any, from the ſale of the books; not thinking that ſuch a purchaſe, as I had made from an ignorant woman, could give me a juſt title to the whole *heirſhip*, as ſhe called it, that had coſt her ſo dear, as the loſs of her old ſweetheart *Jack Twiſt*.

This good woman's account explained to me, in ſome meaſure, the nature of this work, for the circumſtances of the author who, I could ſee, had been a ſchemer, who had waſted his whole fortune, in the ſearch after the *philoſopher's ſtone*, and having his eyes at length opened to his folly, though too late to remedy it, yet was able to divert

Digitized by Google

vert the grief of his disappointment, by writing these papers, in ridicule of such notions, and from the sale of which he might also expect some relief to his wants.

How just this expectation might have been then, it is now very hard to say, in their present mutilated condition; or what could have moved any man to make such havoc in them; without it was, that the orthodoxy of the clergyman was offended at the author's notions, which he wanted judgment to see, were only a delicate ridicule of those wild, idle dreams which some men, who call themselves philosophers, have thought proper gravely to obtrude upon the world, as learning and knowledge.

But, whatever the motive was, the loss is now irreparable, and has reduced the work to the appearance of a novel or romance, almost the whole philosophical part having been erased; for, as to the personal application of any thing in it, to the present times, the least attention to this account of the author will shew the absurdity and injustice of such an attempt; as it was wrote so long ago, and by a person so little acquainted

Digitized by Google

acquainted with the world, that all the ſtories in it muſt neceſſarily be the mere creatures of imagination.

For the manner in which they are publiſhed, I ſhall only ſay, that it is ſtrictly agreeable to the faith of the text; not one of the many alterations and interpolations, which were in another hand, being given; but wherever I could not clearly make out the very words of the author, I honeſtly omitted the whole, not thinking it allowable or juſt, to palm my own words or ſentiments upon the world, or the credit of another.

How ſcrupulous I have been, in this point, will appear to any one, who ſhall take the pains of conſulting the original manuſcript, which ſhall be depoſited in the public library of one of the univerſities, as ſoon as the work is printed: The only liberty I have taken, being in a few notes in the margin, and ſupplying a connection, where it was broken by any of the above-mentioned accidents.

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS of VOL. I.

BOOK THE FIRST.

CHAP I.

THE apparition of CHRYSAL *to an* ADEPT, *in the very moment of* PROJECTION. *His account of himself, and the cause of his appearing to the author.* Page 1

CHAP. II.

CHRYSAL *gives an account of the person who dug up his body in the mine. The particular manner of his acquiring the knowledge of his life, with an explanation of the nature of memory and consciousness.* 6

CHAP. III.

The history of TRAFFIC. *His father's advice to him; containing some general observations on the nature and end of trade; with rules to ensure success in it.* 10

CHAP. IV.

The history of TRAFFIC *continued: His father's death. He continues in trade, and turns schemer.*

Digitized by Google

His various ſchemes end in his ruin. The riſe and progreſs of his paſſion for AMELIA. *The baſe abuſe of her confidence, by which he cheated her of the greateſt part of her fortune, and afterwards formed diſhonourable deſigns againſt herſelf.* 16

CHAP. V.

Continued: He cheats AMELIA *of the reſidue of her fortune, and marries another woman.* AMELIA *ſues him at law, is caſt, and goes for* JAMAICA. *He is ruined, and follows her.* 22

CHAP. VI.

Concluſion of the hiſtory of TRAFFIC. *He arrives in* Jamaica, *where he learns that* AMELIA *had been taken by the* Spaniards. *He turns buccanier, and ravages the* Spaniſh *coaſts, where he finds* AMELIA. *Juſt as he is going to ſeize her, he is taken priſoner by her huſband. He is condemned to die. He ſues to* AMELIA *for mercy; ſhe rejects him with abhorrence. His puniſhment is changed from death to the mines.* 27

CHAP. VII.

CHRYSAL *purſues the hiſtory of his adventures. He explains ſome difficulties in his own nature. He is offered at confeſſion to a prieſt. The confeſſion and creed of a native* PERUVIAN. *The penance enjoined him by a* Jeſuit. 35

CHAP. VIII.

The holy father's tenderneſs to another penitent, who had raviſhed, murdered, and robbed his own brother's

Digitized by Google

brother's wife. He accepts the spoils as a recompence to the church. He hints a method of preventing the danger of his brother's resentment, and dismisses him with ghostly advice. 41

CHAP. IX.

The father's rage on hearing that his penitent had secreted some of the jewels. The officer is pursued by his brother to the convent, whither he flies for sanctuary. His reception from the father, and the terms of their reconciliation. The father sends away the judge in a fright. The officer is received into the society. 46

CHAP. X.

CHRYSAL *changes his service, and embarks for* Europe *in an* English *man of war. The cause and manner of his coming that way. The occurrences of his passage. On his arrival in* England *he is sent by his master to settle some mistakes in the voyage.* 52

CHAP. XI.

The good consequences of a right understanding between certain persons. CHRYSAL's *reflections on his first seeing the public offices in* London. *His master visits a gentleman, who, in the vehemence of his rage against certain abuses, bits himself a violent slap on the face. The necessity of decency, and the methods of supporting it, instanced in the history of a pretty fellow.* 58

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL's *master gives his friend some hints, that make him lower his note. An uncommon piece of generosity returned more politely than could be expected from the parties. An odd story of an unfashionable steward. The success of* CHRYSAL's *mediation in favour of his late master.* 65

CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAL *explains some farther properties of his nature. He changes his appearance for the mode of the country; and enters into the service of a noble lord. The sagacity of Mr.* Poundage, *and his address in business.* 69

CHAP. XIV.

The history of Mr. Thomas Poundage. *His lordship goes to his appointment. An evening's entertainment in high-life.* CHRYSAL *changes his service: his reflections on the ruling passions of the times.* 74

CHAP. XV.

The company represented in perspective. Set a beggar on horseback and he'll ride to the devil. A new way of parrying a dun, and paying debts of honour. A commission broker flung. A connoisseur deceived by his own judgment and eminent taste for VIRTU. *History of a noble breeches-maker.* 78

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XVI.

The character of a VIRTUOSO. *The history of an* HORNED COCK; *with some curious philosophical remarks on cornuted animals.* 91

CHAP. XVII.

More mortification to human vanity. A reason for submitting to be pillaged by sharpers. What's got over the devil's back, is spent under his belly. Filial piety remarkably rewarded. 99

CHAP. XVIII.

CHRYSAL *gives a farther account of his late lord. The methods by which he had been initiated in the mysteries of polite life. Some sketches of the character of his next master, who gives him to an extraordinary person.* 106

CHAP. XIX.

The history and character of CHRYSAL's *new master. His adventures at a coffee-house. The fun of a modern* GENIUS *retorted upon himself, by the grave rebuke of a testy veteran.* 110

CHAP. XX.

Some further account of CHRYSAL's *master. His conversation and engagement with two booksellers. Some of the secrets of the trade.* CHRYSAL *changes his service.* 116

Digitized by Google

BOOK THE SECOND.

CHAP. I.

CHRYSAL *enters into the ſervice of the gentleman of a general Gratitude in high and low life. The modern way of riſing in the world, and the happineſs of dependance. Influence of* CHRYSAL'S *maſter, with his curious manner of ſupporting it.* 123

CHAP. II.

The hiſtory of Mr. WILLIAM. *Some odd circumſtances in his conduct accounted for. By a progreſſion equally polite and frugal,* CHRYSAL *comes from his poſſeſſion into that of a celebrated female.* 129

CHAP. III.

The manner in which CHRYSAL'S *new miſtreſs received and took care of her friend. How ſhe employed herſelf while he was aſleep. Her management of him next morning.* 134

CHAP. IV.

The hiſtory and character of CHRYSAL'S *miſtreſs. She gives him to a noted matron. Some account of his new miſtreſs, and her manner of managing her family.* 139

CHAP. V.

CHRYSAL'S *miſtreſs pays a viſit to the laſt place ſhe could have been ſuſpected for going to. She meets a young lady, with whom, by an artifice, ſhe goes home. Her ſchemes to enſnare the lady.* 143

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VI.

The history of the young lady. She is critically interrupted by the arrival of an unexpected person. She is reconciled to her father, who rewards the woman of the house, and resolves to punish the bawd. 149

CHAP. VII.

The address of CHRYSAL'S *mistress, and civility of a constable. She arrives at the justice's, and is sifted and softened by his clerk, and terrified by his worship.* CHRYSAL *changes his service.* 155

CHAP. VIII.

She is discharged on proper bail. The labours of CHRYSAL'S *new master, in the service of the public, with some of the various mysteries of his office.* 162

CHAP. IX.

An highwayman, improperly taken, saves his life, by losing his reason. Judicial sagacity, and eloquence triumphant over common-sense, and matter of fact. This mystery explained. 168

CHAP. X.

An instance of his worship's exemplary justice on a shop-lifter. The unfashionable compassion and generosity of a sailor. A dispute about superiority of skill, between his worship and his clerk, opens new mysteries in the profession. 175

CHAP. XI.

The breach happily made up by the arrival of company. The evening concluded in character. His worship

Digitized by Google

worſhip goes next morning to hear a charity ſermon, and from thence to eat a charity feaſt, where CHRYSAL *enters into a new ſervice. Some account of the nature of a charity feaſt.* 180

CHAP. XII.

A repreſentation of the company. The hiſtory of one of the principal members. The modern method of bribing Heaven with the wages of Hell. 184

CHAP. XIII.

Continued: The hiſtory of a general almoner. His method of making charity begin at home. He converts a noted bawd, but diſappoints his deſigns, by too great confidence in his own ſkill. The character of a clergyman. 191

CHAP. XIV.

Continued: The hiſtory of a beggar-leader. His method of making his pupil's maſters earn their money. The general conſequence of cloſe friendſhips between the different ſexes. He modeſtly offers his pupil's mother a nut almoſt too hard for her liquoriſh tooth: but ſhe ſwallows it whole, to ſave the trouble of mumbling, and meets a juſt return for her untimely paſſion. 196

CHAP. XV.

Continued: Some reflections that may appear impertinent to many, and unprofitable to more, but ſtill are neither improper nor unjuſt. The hiſtory of an honeſt attorney. More wonders! The way of the world reverſed: Right triumphant over might; and gratitude ſhewn in high life. 206

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XVI.

Continued: The happy fruits of unequal marriages. A short way to pay long debts. The pleasures of polite life. A bold stroke of female genius triumphant over law and religion: an unlucky mistake brings an improper visitor into too genteel company. 211

CHAP. XVII.

Continued: Confusion worse confounded, rout on rout: the transformation of a constable into a devil introduces a story of the Devil's dancing in masquerade, and frightens a polite assembly into a fit of devotion, which lasts an whole night with most of them. A glimpse of the courage of a modern man of honour. 220

CHAP. XVIII.

Continued: Maternal tenderness of an uncommon kind. A most magnificent wedding disappointed, by an unhappy instance of female frailty. A new method of calculating general opinion. An unlucky accident changes a scene of joy into grief, and affords an useful caution to old age and infirmity, to guide their steps with proper care. A drawn battle. An instance of fell revenge makes room for a stranger, who restores general harmony. 229

CHAP. XIX.

More happy fruits of female government. The history of an eminent patroness of the polite arts. Her peculiar method of shewing a distinguished taste

Digitized by Google

taſte and judgment. An extraordinary charge in a bill at an inn. 238

CHAP. XX.

An irremidable defect in human policy. The hiſtory of a moſt eminent perſonage. A new way of paying the debts of guardianſhip. A daughter's diſobedience in refuſing to comply with more than paternal love. The hero of the tale extracts profit from charity, and aſſerts the right of agency, in defiance of public opinion and ſhame. 245

CHAP. XXI.

The repreſentation concluded with an eminent man-midwife. His motives for taking up that profeſſion, with ſome unfortunate anecdotes of his practice. 253

CHAP. XXII.

Some account of the officers of the charity. Their care of themſelves. They fall out about the diviſion of the ſpoil. A terrible uproar is appeaſed by a demand of general concern. The conciſe manner of paſſing public accounts. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.* 259

Digitized by Google

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE ADVENTURES OF

A GUINEA.

CHAP. I.

The apparition of CHRYSAL *to an* ADEPT, *in the very moment of* PROJECTION. *His account of himself, and the cauſe of his appearing to the author.*

ON a day, when long and ſtrict abſtinence had purified my body from every *terrene* incumbrance, and intenſe contemplation wound up my mind to an enthuſiaſm fit for *empyreal* converſation, as I ſtood with my eyes riveted on the *obſtetric* flame, in ſtrong expectation of

Digitized by Google

the birth of the *myſtic child, the firſt born of the morning*, ready to ſeize the happy moment; *when the earth ſufficiently impregnated with the water, aſcendeth white and ſplendent, that I might compound the pure elements, before they fly from the fire, and ſo perfect the great work*; my eyes began to dazzle, and the power of imagination overwhelmed my ſoul.——I ſaw a blue effulgence break from the liquid gold, and play about the genial vaſe! —I was aſtoniſhed! I thought it the *ſubſtantial form of the ſon of the ſun!* I thought the happy moment was come, when *the roſe of the eaſt ſhould bloom in the deſert*, and mine the favourite hand to cultivate its growth! I indulged the pleaſing thought! I melted in the virtuous joy! and, in obedience to the divine impulſe, I kneeled to receive the reward of all my labours, *the radian crown of wiſdom and glory*, from the hand of nature, with every ſenſe and faculty ſuſpended, for fear of interrupting the myſterious proceſs.

As my ſoul hung in this extaſy, the flame which wrapped the *ſacred birth in the bed of purification*, aroſe with the glory too ſtrong for mortal ſenſe, and filled the room. My ſenſes ſunk under the preſſure, and I was diſſolved into a trance, when a voice, celeſtially harmonious, encouraged me to raiſe my eyes, and I beheld *the body of the effulgence condenſe into an incorporeal ſubſtance in the form of a ſpirit*, while a placid ſhade ſoftened the fierceneſs of the radiance, and made it tolerable to human ſenſe.

An holy horror curdled all my blood; but the melody of the ſame voice, which had before emboldened me to look up, re-aſſured my fainting heart with theſe words: 'Son of pains 'and votary of ſcience! thy unwearied perſeve-

'rance

Digitized by Google

'rance has prevailed, and I am ſent to crown 'thee with the virgin roſe! I am CHRYSAL*, 'the ſpirit of that incorruptible maſs now glow-'ing in that vaſe before thee, who in reward 'of thy noble conſtancy in offering this thy 'laſt mite, on the ſhrine of knowledge, am 'come to reveal to thee the myſteries of na-'ture, and ſatisfy that raging thirſt for wiſdom 'which has ſo long excruciated thy ſoul, and 'thus emaciated thy body! And that thou 'mayeſt the better comprehend the greatneſs of 'this honour vouchſafed unto thee, I ſhall trace 'the operations of nature through her moſt ſe-'cret receſſes, and illuſtrate the truth of what 'I ſay, by a detail of the various incidents 'of my being, in my preſent ſtate, to prepare 'thee for the reception and proper uſe of the '*grand ſecret*, which I ſhall afterwards commu-'nicate!

'I can ſee your thoughts; and will anſwer 'every doubt which may ariſe in your mind at 'the wonders of my relation, without the inter-'ruption of your enquiries, as *awful ſilence is the eſſence of my converſe*, the leaſt breach of which 'puts an end to it for ever! liſten then in mute 'attention, nor let a breath diſturb the myſtic 'tale!'—

The works of nature are infinitely various, and her methods of operation inſcrutable to the curioſity of that vain intruder *Reaſon*, which

* This name is evidently derived from Χρυσὸς Gold, and may probably ſignify *Golden*, from her animating a piece of *Gold*; or, by the univerſal authority of the *occult* philoſophy, ſpirits are always denominated from their office.

Digitized by Google

has of late presumed to pry into her ways, and to doubt if not deny, the reality of all effects, which her short-sighted eye cannot trace to their causes! a presumption that has justly shortened the line of human knowledge, and condensed the mist of ignorance which overspreads the world! Some noble efforts though I see the nature of man preparing to make, to recover that eminence of *conjecture* aud *credulity* which alone can merit such a communication of extraordinary knowledge as is now indulged to you. Some of the most hidden truths which I shall here unfold, has unassisted genius discovered already; and more shall curious penetration make learned guesses at, even in this sceptic age *.

Know then, that in the œconomy of nature, to ease the trouble, and keep up the state of its great author †, *a subordination of ministerial spirits executes the system of his government in all its degrees; one of whom, for the greater order and expedition, is made to actuate every divided particle of matter in this immense universe.* In this distribution, *that* portion of gold was assigned to my charge, upon its first feeling the influence of the ‡*etherial fire of the sun, the general minister of the divine commands.* This happened in *Peru*, where that body of which I then became the spirit, was torn

* See all the modern hypothetical philosophy.

† Essay on spirit.

‡ Sirius.

——Would not these, and many other passages of the same nature which support the systems of those celebrated works, almost tempt us to think, that the writers of them must have had a communication with this or some such spirit, to come at knowledge so supernatural.

Digitized by Google

torn from its peaceful bed two hundred fathoms deep in the bowels of the earth.

I shall not describe my surprize, at my first plunging into those realms of darkness, nor shall I satisfy the curiosity I see rising in you, whether that period was the beginning of my existance, or whether I was, either as a punishment, or reward for a past, or a preparation for a future life thrown into this. These are mysteries not yet discovered, though often most learnedly guessed at. All I shall unfold to you are points already known, or such as I see ready to be found out by human industry, as it would put an end to learning to make a revelation of the objects of its enquiries! Such matters, I say, I shall explain to you, and farther relate some occurrences, the knowledge of which will be equally useful and entertaining, which happened to the several persons with whom I have had intercourse, in the various stages of my present state.

And as you may be at a loss, to know how I could arrive at the knowledge of such facts, many of which happened long before my converse with those persons, I shall inform you, that besides that *intuitive knowledge* common to all spirits, we of superior orders, who animate this universal monarch GOLD, have also a power of entering into the hearts of the immediate possessors of our bodies, and there reading all the secrets of their lives. And this will explain to you the cause of that love of gold, which is so remarkable in all who possesses any quantity of that metal. * *For the operation of every material cause is*

* Essay on Spirit.

Digitized by Google

in proportion to the ſtrength of the ſpirit actuating that cauſe; as the ſtrength of the ſpirit is reciprocally in proportion to the quantity of his material body: and conſequently, when the mighty ſpirit of a large maſs of gold takes poſſeſſion of the human heart, it influences all its actions, and overpowers, or baniſhes the weaker impulſe of thoſe immaterial, uneſſential notions called *virtues.* And this intuition, and power of tranſmigration, I have thus explained, to remove every ſhadow of doubt of what I ſhall relate.

CHAP. II.

CHRYSAL gives an account of the perſon who dug up his body in the mine. The particular manner of his acquiring the knowledge of his life, with an explanation of the nature of memory and conſciouſneſs.

THE firſt object that ſtruck me, when I darted on the power of a ſun-beam, into thoſe infernal regions where my body was juſt dug up, was the perſon into whoſe hands it was when I took poſſeſſion of it.

Dark as the gloom of ſuch a place muſt be, a melancholy, that doubled all the horrors of it, ſat upon his brow. He gazed a moment on *me**, in ſilent grief, and then groaned out theſe words with

* *Chryſal* muſt here mean the *Gold* which now became her body; as ſhe does not ſay that ſhe appeared in the ſpirit to any one before the author.

Digitized by Google

with a vehemence that seemed to burst his heart; 'Damned, damned, pernicious, damning gold! 'how dearly do I purchase this momentary pos- 'session of thee! But let me acknowledge the 'justice of my fate! I wished only for gold, and 'now, this equivocal grant of that wish, is the 'just punishment of the folly, and the wick- 'edness of it.'—Grief here choaked his utterance! he could say no more, but sobbed aloud, while all the dreary caverns echoed to his anguish.

Curiosity prompted me to learn the cause of his distress: I therefore immediately entered into his heart, to read the events of his life, which I doubted not but I should find deeply imprinted there: But I was surprized to find that room in it, which, I could plainly see had been possessed by the love of gold, so filled with sense of pain, with grief, and remorse, that I could scarce gain admission.

Upon this I mounted into the *sanctorium* of his brain, to learn from the spirit of consciousness, which you call SELF, the cause of so uncommon a change, as it is contrary to the fundamental rules of our order, even to give up an heart of which we once get possession. †

I found the spirit very busy, though I thought somewhat odly employed: she was running over a number of *niches*, or impressions, on the fibres of the brain, some of which I observed she renewed with such force, that she almost effaced others, which she passed over untouched, though interspersed among them. The sight of *me* seemed to suspend her works a moment; but as if that pause was only to recover strength, she instantly renewed her labour with great assiduity.

I *looked at her*, my desire to know the meaning of what she was doing, and to signify the cause of my visit, to which she returned me this answer in *a glance*, that interrupted not her work.

(I see you wonder, that I speak of this spirit, though the SELF of a man, as if it was a female; but in this there is a mystery: *every spirit is of both sexes*, but as the female is the worthier with us, we take our denomination from that.)

You are surprised (*looked she*) to find me so earnestly engaged in work which you do not understand; but *in this work consists my very essence. This place where we are, is the seat of memory; and these traces, which you see me running over thus, are the impressions made on the brain by a communication of the impressions made on the senses by external objects.*——*These first impressions are called* IDEAS, *which are lodged in this repository of the memory in these marks, by running which over, I can raise the same* ideas, *when I please, which differ from their first appearance only in this, that, on their return, they come with the familiarity of a former acquaintance**.

How this communication though is made I cannot so well inform you; whether it is by the *oscillation of the nervous fibres*, or by the *operation of a certain invisible fluid*, called *animal spirits*, *on the nerves*; no more than I can explain to you how my touching these marks, on this material substance the brain, can raise *ideas* in the immaterial mind, and with the addition of acquaintance beside; for these are matters not yet fully settled among the learned.

All

* See all the modern philosophy.

Digitized by Google

All I know is, that the thing is agreed to be ſo by ſome, or other, or all of theſe means; and that my whole employment, and end of being, is to touch them over, and acknowledge their acquaintance thus; without my doing which, a man would no longer continue the ſame perſon, for in this acquaintance, which is called *conſciouſneſs*, does all perſonal indentity conſiſt*.

As for the work, I am juſt now particularly engaged in, you muſt know, that this man whom as I am *his ſelf*, I ſhall henceforth, for conciſeneſs and perſpicuity, call *my ſelf*, was once poſſeſſed of, or in power of poſſeſſing, every real happineſs of life, till an inſatiable deſire of riches hurried him into meaſures which overturned all that happineſs, and in the end plunged him into this gulph of miſery.

The traces of that happineſs are thoſe which you ſee me paſs over without renewing; by which means he forgets that he was ever happy, except ſometimes, when the trace of any particular unhappineſs comes ſo near that of any inſtance of happineſs, as unavoidably to touch it; which touch, by the renewal of the idea of ſuch happineſs, only aggravates the ſenſe of the preſent want of it. And thus *I* make memory either a bleſſing or a curſe, according to the nature of the trace which *I renew*.

I ſee you are aſtoniſhed, how a perſon who was ever happy, could poſſibly fall into ſuch miſery as I am now in; but *I* ſhall remove that aſtoniſhment, by the hiſtory of *my* life, in which I ſhall accommodate my account of places and things to the circumſtances of my preſent ſtate,

* Locke.

Digitized by Google

without regard to the univerſality of *our* ſpiritual nature: and call them by their names among men, without the delay or trouble of deſcription.

CHAP. III.

The hiſtory of TRAFFIC. *His father's advice to him; containing ſome general obſervations on the nature and end of trade; with rules to inſure a ſucceſs in it.*

MY name is *Traffic*; I was the only ſon of a wealthy merchant in *London*, who bred me to his own buſineſs. There was nothing remarkable in my youth, except that the characteriſtic paſſion of my heart, ſhewed itſelf, in the very dawn of reaſon, in my eagerneſs to ingroſs and hoard up the bawbles of my play-mates, and the far fetched ſchemes, I laid to over-reach them in all our little bargains.

My father was at firſt delighted with this cunning, which his fondneſs took for the firſt eſſays of a great genius; but, when he ſaw me perſiſt in it after I grew up, and attempt to practiſe the ſame arts, in the courſe of my buſineſs, it gave him ſerious alarms for my future conduct; for he had ever been averſe to theſe artifices which are called *the myſteries of commerce*, and owed his ſucceſs ſolely to cloſe application in the plain way of a fair trader.

But this caution I looked upon with contempt, as timidity and want of genius, and, undiſcouraged by his conſtant repulſes to all my *bold ſtrokes*

Digitized by Google

ſtrokes and deep ſchemes, which I was continually ſuggeſting to him, I reſolved, when I ſhould be at liberty, to indulge my own inclinations, to ſtrike out new ways, that ſhould afford me opportunities of exerting my abilities in their full ſtrength, and ſhewing them in their proper luſtre.

The vanity which prompted avarice to form theſe deſigns, would ſo often break out in boaſting, that my father was fully acquainted with them; and, a ſenſible decline in his health quickening his apprehenſions for me, his tenderneſs would omit nothing which might ſhew me my error, in its proper light, and prevent my falling into ſo deſtructive ways.

Calling me therefore into his cloſet, one morning, he addreſſed me in theſe words; words which dear experience has now printed deeply on my heart, though then they had no weight with me.

'My ſon (ſaid he) the day approaches faſt, 'when you will be in poſſeſſion of the fruits of 'my honeſt induſtry. I leave you a good for-'tune; and have the happineſs to be able to 'tell you, in this trying moment, that no wil-'ful private wrong, or public fraud, makes me 'wiſh it were, by one penny leſs.—As there-'fore it was acquired in the fear of God, if not 'abuſed, it will wear with his bleſſing. Habit 'had ſo wedded me to my buſineſs, that I could 'not leave it off myſelf; and I bred you to it, 'to indulge, as I thought, the bent of your ge-'nius, and to prevent idleneſs from tempting 'youth to folly——But now, that dangerous 'ſeaſon is paſt with you; and the labour of my 'life has taken away all neceſſity of labour from 'yours. Be wiſe then, my ſon, and enjoy the 'happineſs which Heaven offers you, without

'tempting

'tempting a reverſe! You will have riches, more 'than enough, for every natural want, for every 'rational wiſh; and it will ſweeten your enjoy-'ment of them, and draw down the bleſſings of 'Heaven on your head, to employ the ſuper-plus 'in acts of private benevolence and public ſpirit; 'in which beſt of employments, the abilities, 'with which you are ſo liberally bleſſed, will 'find ample room for their exertion; and your 'pious endeavours be rewarded with a ſucceſs, 'that will be an happineſs to your life, and an 'honour to your name.

'As for the profeſſion of a merchant, to which 'you have been bred, Heaven points it out to 'the inhabitants of this country, by our ſituation, 'nor can any other be more advantageous to 'it; but ſtill, even that advantage may be pur-'ſued too far, and the extreme of induſtry may 'ſink into avarice, and ſo diſappoint its own 'end.

'For I muſt tell you, my ſon, that though 'trade adds to the wealth, yet too eager a pur-'ſuit of it, even with the greateſt ſucceſs, di-'miniſhes the ſtrength of a nation. I am ſen-'ſible, that this is againſt received opinion; but 'truth when properly diſplayed, will force con-'viction.

'The real ſtrength of a nation conſiſt in the 'prevalence of diſintereſted ſpirit, which, re-'gardleſs of *ſelf*, throws its weight into the 'public fund; as may be proved by many ex-'amples of ſmall poor ſtates conquering large 'wealthy ones. Whereas the ſpirit of com-'merce centers all in *ſelf*, diſcouraging and de-'ſpiſing, as folly, every thought which does not 'tend that way; and ſo breaking that unanimi-

'ty,

Digitized by Google

'ty, which is the very eſſence of power, and 'only can give it ſucceſs.—A reflection this, my 'ſon, which obſervation confirms too ſtrongly 'at preſent, and which ſeems to overcaſt the 'proſpect of this happy nation.

'My advice therefore to you is, to retire 'from buſineſs, though not to idleneſs. You 'will have a fortune that will make you of con-'ſequence in the ſtate, and give you ſufficient 'employment in the conduct of it, without em-'barraſſing your mind with anxiety for more. 'And, to enable you to follow this advice with 'the greater eaſe, I have ſettled all my affairs, 'and ſhall leave you free from every entangle-'ment of life. This is the advice, the requeſt 'of a fond father, who deſires compliance from 'his dear ſon, and would not force unwilling 'obedience, by any act of authority or com-'mand. But ſhould the love of buſineſs have 'taken ſuch a hold of your heart, as habit 'gave it of mine, and not permit you to comply 'with this requeſt, take, my ſon, the advice of 'experience, and hold faſt the clue it offers to 'guide you through the labyrinths of trade, in 'which the vivacity of your genius may, other-'wiſe, loſe its way. Nor are the rules, I ſhall 'hint to you, many to be remembered, or diffi-'cult to be obſerved.

Be juſt my ſon, in all your dealings; wrong not individuals; nor defraud the public.

'These are all the rules I recommend; but 'in them is comprized more than, perhaps, ap-'pears at firſt view. Do not, therefore, think 'them too obvious to have been neceſſary to be 'repeated! nor let the mention of them give

'offence,

Digitized by Google

'offence, by any ſeeming implication of perſonal 'doubt.

'In the buſineſs of a merchant theſe rules 'comprehend a great extent of meaning, though 'I ſhall mention but a few inſtances of it at 'preſent.

'As for the firſt, *every miſrepreſentation to miſ-* 'lead ignorance, or abuſe credulity, every taking ad- 'vantage by ſuperior knowledge, is a wrong to the 'party ſo deceived; as every artifice to evade the in- 'tention of the legiſlature is a fraud againſt the pub- 'lic, nay againſt yourſelf, and every individual 'who claims the benefits provided by the ordinances, 'ſo defeated of their ſupport.

'This indeed is ſo obvious that it were an 'affront to reaſon to inſiſt on any proof of it. 'The moſt eager purſuer of illicit trade will 'not vindicate a general indulgence of it; and 'if it is not lawful for all, how can it be for 'him; or with what colour can he claim a pro- 'fit, which he is conſcious ariſes only from de- 'ceit, and from the benefit of thoſe very laws 'which he thus defeats?

'The temptations to this breach of honeſty, 'I own, are many and great, and ſome of them 'perhaps plauſible; particularly in thoſe branches 'of trade, which ſeem to bear a more than equal 'ſhare of the weight impoſed for general ad- 'vantage. But, in oppoſition to this, it muſt 'be conſidered, that it is impoſſible to provide 'ſo exactly for a thing, of ſo fluctuating a na- 'ture as trade, that the balance ſhall not in- 'cline, in ſome one inſtance; and that it muſt, 'by the ſame motion which oppreſſes one, be 'favourable to ſome other; and ſo preſerve the 'equi poiſe in the whole; and this obviates

'the

'the only ſhadow of an argument, that can be 'brought in defence of this too common prac- 'tice.

'As for the former, of avoiding private wrong, 'that is more difficult, and leſs defenſible, if 'poſſible, than even this. For where all the 'powers of the mind are turned to *make* advan- 'tage, it is very hard to refrain from *taking* it, 'where we ought not, and bringing the great 'buſineſs of life into common practice, in its 'minuteſt concerns.

'The man, whoſe ſoul is on the ſtretch to 'take advantage, in a bargain for thouſands, on 'the *Exchange*, will be apt perhaps inſenſibly to 'overlook an error that is not to his diſadvan- 'tage, in a tradeſman's bill, or to take no notice 'of a guinea given inſtead of a ſhilling in 'change at the tavern, though either is as great 'diſhoneſty, as if he took them in a manner pu- 'niſhable with death by the laws: not to men- 'tion the innumerable little inſtances of temp- 'tation to this kind of wrong, which occur in 'every moment's dealing. *That we may avoid 'temptation*, is one of the petitions of the divine 'prayer, and never more neceſſary to be offered 'up than in this profeſſion, whoſe conſtant prac- 'tice opens innumerable inſtances of it upon 'us.

'In a word, my ſon, there are ſo many and 'ſtrong arguments of this nature, to be given 'againſt all trade, that the general advantage 'of the common-wealth alone can, in any way, 'ſupport it againſt them. This therefore ſhould 'be written in the deepeſt characters, on the 'heart of every merchant, *that he ſhould never let 'private intereſt tempt him to engage in any trade or*

'*ſcheme*

Digitized by Google

'scheme that can interfere with the public interest, or 'is forbidden by the laws of his country.——I shall 'say no more; nor burthen your mind with 'farther advice. Observe this and be happy.'

I was obliged to hear him; but his words, at that time, made no more impression on my mind, than the whistling of the winds, nor in the least altered my intentions; though I felt no scruple in promising obedience, the breach of which could never be upbraided to me, as I could not think of practising it, before his death should remove the only person who had such an authority.

CHAP. IV.

The history of TRAFFIC *continued: His father's death. He continues in trade, and turns schemer. His various schemes end in his ruin. The rise and progress of his passion for* AMELIA. *The base abuse of her confidence, by which he cheated her of the greatest part of her fortune, and afterwards formed dishonourable designs against herself.*

THE opportunities which I had long panted for, arrived too soon: my father dying, just after I was of age, and leaving me possessed of wealth sufficient for me to exercise my talents on, as I was not blessed with prudence to take his advice, and put it to its proper use, in rational enjoyment.

I was immediately a man of consequence, and that, not only in my own eyes. I made a figure

Digitized by Google

a figure *upon Change*; I signed among the foremost in the public subscriptions. But all this did not satisfy me. I sickened at the thought of having an equal, not only in wealth, the darling object of my soul; but also in the reputation of acquiring it by methods of my own *striking out*, as I looked upon the known course of business as too slow for my advances, and too limited for my genius.

I therefore immediately became a SCHEMER, and entered into every project which my own brain could invent, or artful imposition suggest to me, blindly, wilfully giving up the serenity of an open mind, for the vain appearance of mysterious consequence and design: and making my fortune a prey to every shatking *projector* who flattered my vanity with promises of success, in the very attempts which had been his own ruin.

The perplexity in which this infatuation soon involved my affairs, far from opening my eyes, only set me upon deeper schemes. *Sporting* upon private adventures, *taking in* unwary confidence, *flinging* the fair trader, by eluding the restrictions of law, were now too small a game for me: I was entangled, and must cut the *Gordian knot* by some bold stroke.

I therefore threw off all restraint, and entered into measures the most injurious to my country, which was then engaged in a just and extensive war. I *insured* the effects of its enemies, and of consequence gave them information how to avoid its forces: *I carried on their trade* with other countries: I *supplied* them with provisions from ours; and at length went so far, as to *lend, and procure them money* to support the war against ourselves.

But

Digitized by Google

But all my ſchemes met their juſt fate. Though I could give their ſhips information how to avoid our ſquadrons, yet they fell into the hands of *unſtationed* privateers. My ſubterfuges for carrying on their trade were ſeen through, and a ſtop put to them before I could receive the ſtipulated profit. The ſtores I bought for them were intercepted by our fleets, and, to conclude all, the enemy, by one ſtretch of arbitrary power, refuſed to pay any debts, and appropriated the funds provided for that purpoſe to the preſent ſupport of the war.

This finiſhed my ruin: I had not only lent them all my own fortune, but had alſo borrowed much more to ſupply them, on confidence in their promiſes, than I was now able to pay.

In this ſituation the advice of my father returned full upon me, and aggravated my diſtreſs. But I had no time for reflection; the horrors of a jail ſtared me full in the face, which I had no way to avoid but by flight, the equivocalneſs of my character having made every honeſt man, who was able to aſſiſt me, afraid of being concerned with me.—I therefore immediately raiſed all the money I poſſibly could, and embarked ſecretly in a ſhip of my own for *Jamaica*; Heaven, to make its juſtice the more ſignal, uſing my blackeſt guilt as a chain to draw me to the vengeance I deſerved.

I muſt ſtop here, and look back, to give you an account of an affair, which the precipitancy of my ruin prevented my mentioning in its proper order.

Much as ſuch a complicated ſcene as I have deſcribed, muſt have taken up my time and engroſſed my thoughts, I had ſtill found leiſure for guilt of another nature, though ultimately ſpringing from the ſame cauſe.

I have

Digitized by Google

I hade told you, that my father had acquired his own fortune by induſtry; but as the greateſt induſtry requires a foundation to work upon, his had been aſſiſted by the perſon to whom he ſerved his apprenticeſhip, who knowing his abilities, and confiding in his honeſty, upon the decline of his own health, eſtabliſhed him in partnerſhip with his only ſon, whom he thought too young to conduct ſo extenſive a buſineſs.

My father faithfully executed this great truſt, and continued the partnerſhip, till his obſervation of my unfortunate diſpoſition determined him to make me quit trade; when it was diſſolved, without the leaſt breach in that real friendſhip which had ſo long ſubſiſted between them. Though I did not obey my father's deſire, yet my vanity would not admit a thought of recommencing the partnerſhip, as it would have been but a curb on my favourite *ſchemes*, and have implied a want of aſſiſtance, which, in my own opinion, I was far above. On the contrary, I rather declined too cloſe a connection with him in buſineſs; as I feared he might have taken upon him to interpoſe his advice againſt any thing, which his *narrow, fearful* temper might diſapprove in my *great* deſigns; but as I kept up every other appearance of regard, and even reſpect for him, this ſhyneſs was not obſerved, nor any coolneſs occaſioned by it, in the intercourſe of intimacy between us.

But for this conduct I had another motive, beſides regard for *him*. He had an only daughter, enriched with every beauty and virtue that could mark the favourite work of heaven: ſhe was about four years younger than me, which difference of age had given me an opportunity of treating her with ſuch a fondneſs, from her very

Digitized by Google

very infancy, as raiſed a real love in her grateful heart, as her beauties did the ſtrongeſt one it was capable of feeling in mine. Our fathers had ſeen this growing attachment, with the greateſt pleaſure, from the beginning, and encouraged it between us, (our mothers both died in our infancy) joining in the general opinion, that the union which had always been between their families would be compleated by the intermarriage of their children: an opinion that was then my pride, and ſeemed a pleaſure to the young *Amelia*'s honeſt heart that was above diſguiſe.

But my father's death, before ſhe was of an age to undertake the cares of ſuch an awful ſtate, and a long illneſs of her father's after, during which her filial piety and love would not admit a thought of any thing that ſhould interfere with her tender regard for him, prevented my happineſs from being accompliſhed, while there was any obſtacle that could hinder my evil genius from defeating it.

At length, after languiſhing five years, her father died, without a moment's more immediate warning, having been on the *Exchange* that day as uſual.

In the tumult of this loſs, I was ſent for; and no will being found, for he unhappily had not imagined his end ſo near, nor made any ſettlement of his affairs, in the confidence of our attachment, *Amelia* gave every thing into my hands, and requeſted me to make up all her father's accounts, and conclude her dealings with the world.

This happened juſt as my *ſcheming* had begun to embarraſs my affairs. My heart therefore, never proof to much temptation, yielded to ſuch an

Digitized by Google

an opportunity of recovering the losses of my folly at her expence, by *sinking* the greatest part of her fortune to my own use; never considering that I might have the whole in a just and honourable way, enhanced with the greater blessing of herself.

To accomplish this design, and prepare her for what was to follow, I pretended to *Amelia*, that I found many difficulties in her father's affairs; and having secreted as much as I thought proper, and could with safety, and destroyed every memorial that might detect me, for all which her unbounded confidence gave ample opportunity, I at length gave her in an account, with the strongest expressions of concern, 'to 'find that what I had long apprehended was 'too true, and her father's affairs in a very bad 'situation; that I had however, with great dif-'ficulty, got together something above ten thou-'sand pounds, and was convinced, that this per-'plexity in his affairs, was the occasion of his 'long illness, and had not left him spirit enough 'to enquire into them and make a will.'

This representation had the effect I designed; *Amelia*'s confidence in me would not admit a thought of my deceiving her; as pride, too powerful in the purest human heart, prevented her revealing her circumstances to any one else, who might have attempted to disprove what I said; though indeed it was scarce natural to suspect me of a deceit, that according to the opinion which then prevailed concerning *Amelia* and me, could only affect myself.

She therefore, with an appearance of surprize rather than doubt, or even concern, acquiesced, and signed a receipt in full, desiring me to

Digitized by Google

to deſtroy all her father's books and papers, as they could be of no farther uſe to her.

This compleated my deſign beyond a poſſibility of detection, and even raiſed a new one againſt the poor pittance I had left her, though it was not quite a fourth part of what was really her right: for I had now thrown off all thoughts of marriage with one *ſo far beneath me in fortune*, looking upon it as a reproach to my wiſdom and knowledge of the world, to make any *bargain* in which I ſhould not have the advantage: for what I had ſo baſely defrauded her of, I conſidered merely as an acquiſition of my ſuperior ſkill in buſineſs, and abſolutely my own, without any manner of obligation to the perſon from whom I had obtained it: not that I had loſt my *deſire* for her perſon, (the only degree of love my heart was capable of feeling) but the advantage I had it now in my hopes to obtain over her made me look upon her, as a ſure prey to my pleaſure.

CHAP. V.

Continued. He cheats AMELIA *of the reſidue of her fortune, and marries another woman.* AMELIA *ſues him at law, is caſt, and goes for* JAMAICA. *He is ruined, and follows her.*

THOUGH my whole life was one continued ſcene of villainy, yet in all, there was a gradation, a regular deſcent from bad to worſe; each ſucceſsful crime opening new opportunities and ſuggeſting ſchemes which never entered into my thoughts before.

This

Digitized by Google

This was exactly my case with regard to *Amelia*. While she was in possession of her whole fortune, the highest wish of my heart was to marry her; but no sooner had an unhappy accident given me an opportunity of defrauding her of far the greatest part of it, than that respectful love immediately sunk into loose desire, and my success in my former schemes against her, set my thoughts at work to accomplish the gratification of this passion, on my own base terms.

To bring this design to perfection, it was necessary that I should get her fortune intirely into my power; which I accordingly formed schemes to accomplish without delay; for the success of my former attempt, so far from satisfying my avarice, or raising any sense of compassion in my breast, for her wrongs, had made me look upon herself, and all that belonged to her, as my property, which I was as impatient to possess as if it was detained from me by injustice.

I therefore took occasion one day, when we were alone together, to drop some words of concern, at my not having, immediately by me, a sum of money to lay out on most advantageous terms, which had been that very morning proposed to me.

She directly took the hint, and said, her little fortune was still in her hands, in the same bank notes I had given her; and if the use of it, for any time could be of advantage to me, she should feel a greater pleasure in my taking it, than in any profit she could make of it, any other way.

This was just what I wished; and though I could scarce refrain from laughing, at the easiness with which she took the bait, I would not accept

Digitized by Google

cept of her offer but with this reſtriction, that I would conſider whether the terms propoſed to *me* might not ſuit *her*, and be more advantageous than the intereſt I could afford her if I ſhould make uſe of it myſelf. I ſaid this with an equivocal ſmile, which ſhe underſtood as I would have her, and immediately, with an aſſenting bluſh, put the notes into my hand, without requiring a receipt, or any kind of acknowledgment for them.

Having thus gained that which I reckoned the better part of *Amelia*, and ſure as I imagined, of herſelf, when neceſſity ſhould humble her to my deſigns, as I had her whole means even of ſubſiſtance in my power, I directly reſolved to cloſe with an offer, ſome time before made me by a wealthy merchant, of a large fortune, with his daughter, whom I accordingly married, a few days after I had got poſſeſſion of *Amelia*'s money.

I ſhall ſpare myſelf the pain of any farther deſcription of my wife, than that ſhe was the very reverſe of *Amelia*, in ſoul and body; and my marriage conſequently as unhappy as I juſtly deſerved.

But I comforted myſelf with hopes of happineſs in the enjoyment of *Amelia*, whom I looked upon as my own, and only deferred making my baſe propoſals to, till her reſentment at my marriage ſhould cool, and I could deviſe ſome plan of privacy to elude the vigilance of my wife. Not but I dreaded the firſt emotions of her anger, which I expected to break out in loud complaints. But I was miſtaken, in meaſuring her ſoul thus by my own. She ſcorned to complain; nor did I hear a word from her to interrupt the riot of my

Digitized by Google

my wedding. A greatneſs of ſoul, ſo far above my comprehenſion, that I attributed it to fear of giving offence to one, in whoſe power ſhe muſt be ſenſible ſhe was.

But, at the end of the month, I was awoke from thoſe dreams, by a meſſage from her, delivered by a relation of her's, to deſire I ſhould pay in her money to him, for which he would give me her receipt. As I was not prepared for this, I believe it threw me into a confuſion too viſible; but I ſoon recovered preſence of mind enough to anſwer, that 'I could not but be ſurprized at ſuch a demand, as *Amelia* muſt be ſenſible, that I had paid her all the money of her's that was in my hands, for which I had her diſcharge in full.'

The gentleman replied in aſtoniſhment, 'Her diſcharge, Sir! that was when you *ſettled* her affairs; but ſhe ſays, that ſhe, ſince then, gave her whole fortune into your hands, to lay out for her. And, Sir, *my* couſin is known to be neither a fool or a liar; though I fear ſhe has ſuffered ſeverely for her ill-placed confidence.'—'Perhaps ſhe ſays ſo, Sir, (ſaid I) but I know nothing of the matter, and am not accountable for what ſhe ſays or you think, Sir; and I ſuppoſe, if your couſin is not a fool, ſhe has not given her money without ſomething to ſhew for it. But you muſt excuſe my talking any longer on ſo idle a ſubject; and ſo, Sir, your ſervant.'——The mine was now ſprung, and I waited with impatience for the event. As to her demand, I knew ſhe could never ſupport it, as there was no perſon preſent when ſhe gave me the notes; and I had

negociated them in a manner, beyond all poſſibility of their being traced.

While I was hugging myſelf in this ſecurity, the friends of *Amelia* perſuaded her to bring a bill in chancery againſt me, in which the whole affair was ſet forth without any exaggeration. But this I made light of, as I had *my lawyer* ready, under whoſe directions I ſwore ſuch an anſwer as ſet her charge entirely aſide.—Elate with this ſucceſs, I thought this the time to purſue my victory, and wrote her a letter, in which I attributed every thing of my conduct of late, that might have ſurprized her, to love, and deſpair of obtaining her by any other method: and offered her a ſettlement above the demand ſhe had made to me, if ſhe would conſent to my deſires. This I wrote in ſuch general terms, that my letter could not be brought in evidence againſt me, and the largeneſs of the offer was only to decoy her into a treaty, there being nothing farther from my thoughts than ever to make her independent of my pleaſure.

This inſult only added new fewel to her reſentment; and all the anſwer I received, was by another bill; but this met the ſame fate, by the ſame methods with the former.

After this, I heard no more of *Amelia* for ſome time: but what was my aſtoniſhment, when I was informed, that ſhe had ſold off her jewels, and other little effects, and was gone to a relation of her's who lived in *Jamaica*! This broke all my deſigns; and deſpair of ever obtaining her awoke my love, and aggravated my remorſe for my ill uſage of her, almoſt to madneſs.

From this time the hand of Heaven ſeemed to be upon me; every thing I had any concern in, miſcarried;

Digitized by Google

miſcarried; and, to haſten my ruin, my houſe was a perfect ſink of riot and debauchery: my wife, as ſhe had no charms to excite deſire, in a manner, publickly purchaſing the gratification of her luſts at the moſt extravagant expence, and living in a profuſion that muſt deſtroy even a royal fortune.

Mine, great as it had been, ſunk under ſo many diſſipations of all kinds; and I had no reſource left as I ſaid before, but in precipitate flight, which Heaven made my paſſion for *Amelia* direct to *Jamaica*, to mark the juſtice of its vengeance the more plainly.

CHAP. VI.

Concluſion of the hiſtory of TRAFFIC. *He arrives in* Jamaica, *where he learns that* AMELIA *had been taken by the* Spaniards. *He turns buccanier, and ravages the* Spaniſh *coaſts, where he finds* AMELIA. *Juſt as he is going to ſeize her, he is taken priſoner by her huſband. He is condemned to die. He ſues to* AMELIA *for mercy; ſhe rejects him with abhorrence. His puniſhment is changed from death to the mines.*

I Had hitherto varniſhed over my villanies with hypocriſy and ſtrove to preſerve ſome appearance, at leaſt, of virtue. But this was a reſtraint no longer poſſible, nor indeed profitable to me now, when my flight took off the veil, and alarmed all mankind againſt me; ſo that mine was really a ſtate of war with all the world.

Digitized by Google

On my arrival in *Jamaica*, I had the addition to my grief to find, that *Amelia* had been taken in her paſſage thither by a Spaniſh privateer.

This drove me to deſpair: I was wearied of life; but reſolved not to die unrevenged on thoſe who had thus, as I thought, robbed me of my hopes; never reflecting on the improbability of her hearkening to my ſuit.

Burning with this project, I fitted out my ſhip, and manned her with a crew as deſperate as myſelf; reſolving, though the war was at an end, to purſue my revenge upon the *Spaniards*, on the defenceleſs coaſt of their *American* dominions, in which my other paſſions were urged to haſte, by fear of my creditors, the news of my ſailing having come to *Jamaica* almoſt as ſoon as myſelf.

We therefore ſet out upon our cruiſe, or rather piracy, without delay, of which I ſhall not raiſe your horror with any further particulars, than that we went directly into the *Spaniſh Main*, where we not only rifled all the ſhips we met, but alſo made deſcents on the coaſts, and ravaged with a barbarity that was a reproach to human nature.

The tumult and hurry of this life kept my ſpirits in an agitation, that gave a kind of reſpite to my grief; and the ſpoil we made in our firſt enterprizes was ſo great, as to awake hopes of reſtoring my affairs, ſo as to enable me to return to *England* with all the credit wealth could give.——And could I have known when to ſtop, I was ſoon rich even beyond my moſt ſanguine hopes: but urged by avarice, and encouraged by ſucceſs, I ſtill went on headlong to my fate, which I met in an attempt upon a town, ſome way up in the country, the convenience and pleaſantneſs

Digitized by Google

ſantneſs of whoſe ſituation had made it the reſidence of the richeſt families in the whole province: as its diſtance from the coaſt made them live in a ſtate of perfect ſecurity, without any fortification or guard.

To this place we directed our march, one evening, and arrived at it a little after midnight, with an intention to ſurprize the inhabitants, and return to our ſhip with the ſpoil, before the country could riſe to intercept us.

The firſt part of our deſign ſucceeded, and we got poſſeſſion of the town without any reſiſtance; where we committed all the outrages, and roamed about with the licentious careleſſneſs of freebooters under no command.

While every one thus prowled about for prey, fate goaded me to an arbour in a garden, whither I followed the cries of women! I was juſt ruſhing in among them, inflamed with brutal deſire, when—what was my aſtoniſhment to ſee *Amelia* in the moſt magnificent undreſs, throwing heaps of gold and jewels into a vault that opened by a trap door into the arbour! I ſtood motionleſs at the ſight for ſome moments, in diſtruſt of my ſenſes, but two ſuch objects as ſhe and her riches, ſoon awoke me from my trance, and I advanced to take poſſeſſion of both, reſolving not to diſcover myſelf till a more proper time; the ſtrangeneſs of my dreſs, that was deſigned to ſtrike horror, and the blood which, from ſcenes of cruelty and murder juſt committed, ſtill reeked upon my hands and face, making it impoſſible that ſhe ſhould know me.

At the ſight of me, the women all ſhrieked, and *Amelia*, as I advanced to lay hold on her, fell into a ſwoon. This embarraſſed me greatly, as

Digitized by Google

I had no time to loose; for our centinels just then sounded a retreat. However, I thought I would wait a little, to see if she recovered, and stooping to raise her, to give her air, I received such a blow from behind, as deprived me of all sense for several hours; when, on my recovering, I found myself chained on the ground in a dungeon.

I was some time before I could believe my senses, or conceive where I was; till the jailor coming to see if I was alive, gave me to understand, that my companions had gone off without me, and left me in the hands of a nobleman, who had himself knocked me down, as I was going to commit a rape upon his lady, while she lay in a swoon; and that I had been thrown into this dungeon, that if I recovered, I might suffer the punishment due to the outrages we had committed both here, and in several other places of their dominions.

I wanted no further information to shew me the horrors of my situation. I saw them all, and aggravated an hundred fold, by the accusations of my own conscience, that could now trace the hand of Heaven in the justice of my punishment, which had thus overtaken me, in the presence, and on the account of *Amelia*. I wished for death, as my only relief, and determined to seek it: but, alas! my resolution failed me; and I feared to die. In this misery I was dragged before a magistrate, who enumerating the crimes we had been guilty of, condemned me to immediate death.

This sentence, so much milder than my fears, awoke an hope of further mercy, to obtain which, my evil genius suggested it to me, to apply to *Amelia*, absurdly flattering myself that some sparks of

Digitized by Google

of her love for me might yet remain alive, or at leaſt, her goodneſs take delight in ſhewing itſelf ſuperior to my ill-treatment. Baſe hope, that met its juſt reward!

I therefore waved attempting a defence of other crimes, as I was conſcious that I could not make any, but aſſerted my innocence, as to the particular charge of a baſe deſign upon *Amelia*, at the time I was taken, adding, that 'I had the 'honour of being nearly related to that lady, 'and that, if I was indulged with a few words 'with her, in the preſence of all there, I hoped 'I might be found to merit a mitigation of my 'ſentence.'

On my mentioning the name of *Amelia*, I obſerved one of the principal perſons in the court, whom I ſoon underſtood to be her huſband, kindle into rage. He did not however interrupt me; but as ſoon as I had concluded, he ſtarted up, and exclaimed with the moſt furious indignation: '*Amelia*, thy relation! No more than 'angels are related to devils, by ſpringing from 'the ſame Creator! Her virtues are diſhonour-'ed by the claim! But ſhe ſhall appear and diſ-'prove the odious calumny.'—Saying which words, he inſtantly went for her, while an hollow murmur of ſurprize and deteſtation made the ſilence of the court the more dreadful, and heightened the horrors of my ſuſpence.

But I waited not long: *Amelia* ſoon appeared, led in by her huſband, and being ſeated by the judge, 'Where (ſaid ſhe, looking round with the ſerenity of conſcious virtue) 'Where is 'the perſon who ſays he is related to me?'

The ſight of her threw me into ſuch a conflict of paſſions, that without reflecting where

I was, or how neceſſary it might be for me to raiſe her compaſſion by ſome moving addreſs, that might ſoften the ſeverity of her reſentment for my former treatment of her, as well as aſſure her of my innocence of any baſe deſign againſt her perſon, in the condition ſhe was in when I was taken, I could not forbear crying out in *Engliſh*, for I had ſpoken before in *Spaniſh*, in which I expreſſed myſelf but badly, 'O *Amelia!* haſt 'thou then forgot me?'

At the ſound of my voice ſhe ſtarted, and looking earneſtly at me for a moment, fell upon her knees, and lifting her hands and eyes to Heaven, ſhe ſaid aloud in *Spaniſh*, 'O God, 'how ſignal is thy juſtice! Let me, let all the 'world acknowledge and adore it!'—And then riſing and turning to her huſband, who ſtood in amazement: 'This, my lord, (ſaid ſhe) this is 'the man of whom I have informed you: This 'is that *Traffic* whoſe baſe diſhoneſty obliged 'me to leave my native country; and ſo, by 'that providence which is able to turn the 'greateſt misfortune into a bleſſing, was made 'the cauſe of my preſent happineſs with you. I 'abjure all kindred with him; I deſire he may 'be examined as to my ſtory; and if he can 'vary in the leaſt from what I have told you, let 'me be condemned to the ſevereſt puniſhment, 'but that of ſtaying longer in his ſight, or ever 'ſeeing his face more.'

On this ſhe withdrew, without deigning a look at me: but her words had a proper effect upon my heart, and I reſolved to do her juſtice. I therefore prevented her huſband's command, and, in as few words as poſſible, related the black affair with the ſtricteſt truth. When

I had

I had concluded, her lord declared, that I had not only confirmed every thing ſhe had told him, but alſo added many circumſtances of my own guilt, which ſhe had omitted, or perhaps not known.

So complicated guilt ſeemed to require conſideration to find out proper puniſhment, ſo I was remanded to my dungeon, but without the leaſt encouragement to hope. The next day I was again brought into the court, where my former ſentence was changed into that of being broke alive upon the wheel; and this ſeverity was ſaid to be in juſtice to *Amelia*.

When I had ſtood ſome moments ſtupified with fear, the judge addreſſed me again in theſe words: 'Thou haſt heard, O wretched man, 'the ſentence due to thy crimes; but great as 'they have been, mercy extends her hand to 'thee. The virtues of the illuſtrious *Donna* '*Amelia* over-balance thy guilt, and have pre-'vailed for a mitigation of thy puniſhment, in 'gratitude to that divine providence which made 'thee the cauſe of her coming among us. 'Thou ſhalt not die, becauſe we would not 'kill thy ſoul, before thou haſt had time to 'repent of thy crimes; nor ſhalt thou ſuffer 'torture, that thy ſtrength may not be impaired 'for the labour to which thy life is doomed; 'for this is the laſt day that thou ſhalt ever be-'hold the light of Heaven: Thou ſhalt im-'mediately deſcend into the mines, there to 'work out the reſidue of thy unhappy days, in 'raiſing that gold for the uſe of others, the 'inſatiable deſire of which was the cauſe of all 'thy guilt.

Digitized by Google

I would have ſpoken, in the agony of my ſoul, to deſire death; but I was ſtopped by the judge, who ſternly ſaid, that to hear a word from me would be an inſult upon juſtice. On his ſaying which, I was hurried away to the mountains over us, and precipitated into this gulph, where I have now been near ———

Juſt as he ſaid this, I was obliged to fly away to my body, which the unhappy *Traffic* had thrown from his hand, into the veſſel in which it was to be raiſed from the mine.

The length of this ſtory will make you wonder, when I tell you, that the ſpirit of *Traffic* ſhewed it to me in a moment, for no longer did the gold remain in his poſſeſſion: and I am always obliged to attend my body whenever it changes its maſter. But to underſtand this, you muſt be informed, that *we ſpirits do not diſtinguiſh our exiſtence by time or a ſucceſſion of parts, as men do; with us, there is nothing paſt or to come, but every thing is preſent in one view*, ſo far as the natural courſe of cauſes and effects is preſerved free from interruption by ſuperior power.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VII.

CHRYSAL pursues the history of his adventures. He explains some difficulties in his own nature. He is offered at a confession to a priest. The confession and creed of a native PERUVIAN. *The penance enjoined him by a* Jesuit.

THERE is no crime, however black in its own nature, that does not receive an aggravation from hypocrisy; but the highest exertion of this vice is, when it makes a pretext of the best institutions, to promote the practice of the worst actions. Of this I have seen innumerable instances, in the adventures of my present state; tho' none so flagrant as what I shall now relate.

You may imagine I felt pleasure at emerging from that infernal abyss into light. There was nothing remarkable in the three or four first stages I went through, my temporary owners being only the refiners and other tradesmen, who purified me from mixtures of mineral dross.

I *see* you are desirous to know how I could preserve my *identity*, when melted down with large quantities of the same metal. But you must know, that *spirits have a power of expanding or contracting themselves into what dimensions they please; and that their life is not confined to any particular parts, as the heart or head, as in man, but is diffused through their whole bodies, so that any part being separated from the rest, does not die;* * but

* Milton.

but that portion of spirit which was in it, at the time of such separation, serves as a life for it, and becomes a distinct spirit, to inform that distinct body, and so on, ad infinitum * : for as it is agreed upon, that bodies can be infinitely divided, upon the same principles, spirit must also; for it would be most absurd and impious to deny of the superior any perfection which we attribute to the inferior. —The enlarging of my body, therefore, by the addition of more matter or the lessening it by ever so many divisions, makes no alteration in my *sameness*, so long as my conscious ness remains † : *The former only increasing by energy, by the accession of so much spirit as informed the additional matter* ‡ ; *for we spirits embody ourselves entircly in commixtion, and resolve into one* ‖ ; as the latter separates us again into distinct beings, to animate our separate bodies.

The first absolute owner to whom I belonged, was a native *Peruvian*, who had found means to purloin a considerable quantity of gold, part of which I was, and who presented me, as a peace-offering to an ecclesiastic at confession.

I *see* you have a curiosity to know my sentiments on religious matters; but I have told you before, that I am not allowed to make revelations. Sufficient on this head have been already made to man, did not his preverseness distort them from their original perspicuity and perfection.

As there was something in the transactions which passed, when I was offered to this ecclesiastic,

* Essay on Spirit.
† Locke.
‡ Essay on Spirit.
‖ Milton.

Digitized by Google

ſiaſtic, that may be new to you, I ſhall repeat ſome particulars of them.

You muſt have heard of the authority of the clergy, in all the countries which profeſs the religion of the *Roman pontiff*, and particularly thoſe under the *Spaniſh* monarchy. Of all the ſeveral orders which compoſe this political *hierarchy*, thoſe who call themſelves THE COMPANIONS OF THEIR GOD *, have acquired the greateſt power.

Though this title may appear profanely great to you, yet they ſeem to ſupport it by the ſhare which they aſſume, in ſome of his moſt ſacred prerogatives.

To a reverend father, of this order, was I preſented, on the feſtival called *Eaſter*. He was ſeated in a retired chamber of his temple, in the exerciſe of one of the functions of the Deity *hearing, and puniſhing, or forgiveing ſins*, according to his ſovereign pleaſure. It is not poſſible to give you *here* an idea of the ſolemnity of this ceremony, in a country where all religion is evaporated into ſhew. Be it ſufficient to ſay, that the pageantry was ſuch a mockery of the Deity, as no other of his creatures but *man*, would dare to commit.——The man who brought me into this myſterious fane, advanced with fear and trembling to the *apparent Deity* of the place, and, kneeling before him, confeſſed himſelf guilty of ſeveral *heinous crimes*, in the *admiſſion* of *involuntary thoughts* and *indulgence* of the *appetites of nature*, contrary to the rules laid down for him by his ſpiritual guide——But this will be beſt explained by

* The Jeſuits call themſelves *Socii Jeſu*, the Companions of Jeſus.

Digitized by Google

by inſtances. The firſt crime which the penitent revealed, was having taſted a morſel of fleſh on a day when it was prohibited. The father, with a ſevere frown, told him, 'That was a great 'ſin, which he muſt atone for, by working two 'days for the church, without hire, and abſtaining from fleſh, at the ſame time, though it was 'generally allowed.'

He next confeſſed, that he had beaten a dog belonging to a prieſt, which had broke into his hut, and eaten the pottage prepared for him, by which means he had been obliged to go to ſleep without his ſupper. At this, the prieſt knitting his brow into tenfold auſterity, exclaimed, 'This 'is rebellion! rebellion againſt your God! Do 'you not know, that the dog of an eccleſiaſtic 'is above the greateſt (even white) layman, 'much more a wicked native! you muſt make 'amends!—you muſt!—or'——The tone and geſture with which he ſpoke theſe words, ſo terrified the trembling wretch, that he inſtantly put his hand into his boſom, and, pulling *me* out, preſented me to make his peace. As ſoon as *I* appeared the prieſt's features ſoftened, the tone of his voice fell, and receiving me, with a gracious ſmile, 'You have not ſaid (ſays he) that 'the maſter of the dog was a jeſuit! the crime, 'therefore, though great, may be forgiven! but 'beware for the future, and remember, that 'the world, and all in it, belongs to us; and 'that to be guilty of the leaſt diſobedience, 'even in thought, is treaſon, and deſerves the 'ſevereſt puniſhment. Proceed! unburthen your 'conſcience! I know your thoughts, but would

'have

'have you ſpeak them, that I may prove your 'ſincerity. Proceed! I am in haſte!'

The penitent then went on—'O father, be 'merciful, and I will confeſs all! Returning 'from my labour one evening late, I found my 'door faſtened, and, no one anſwering when I 'called, I burſt it in, when behold, I ſaw father '*Ignatius* in the very act of carnality with my 'beloved wife *Mootaw!* I was amazed! and 'though fear prevented my ſtriking him, I could 'not forbear thinking in my heart, that he who 'does thoſe things, can be no *god*, he muſt be 'only *man*; and I curſed him in the bitterneſs 'of my ſoul; but he was drunk with wine, and 'did not hear me.'

'Wretch! devil! heretic! (exclaimed the fa-'ther in a rage) thou intrude upon the pri-'vacy of a *Jeſuit!* thou ſay, he was but a *man?* 'thou *think*, he could not know thy very 'thoughts, becauſe he had drank wine! auda-'cious ſlave! Art not thou, and thy wife his? 'had he not a right to uſe his own? was it not 'an honour to thee, ungrateful wretch? and 'dareſt thou to *think a Jeſuit is but a man?* But 'it is enough, the inquiſition ſhall teach thee 'faith and obedience; the inquiſition—'

At that tremendous word, the wretch, half dead with fear, fell at his feet, crying out, 'O 'father, O God, O King, forgive, forgive! '(and pulling out of his boſom the reſt of his 'gold) take this, O lord, from your poor ſlave, 'and forgive.—Take this, which I got at the 'peril of my life, and ſaved to buy the liberty 'of my dear child, whom my maſter took from 'me; take it, and forgive; let her ſtill be a ſlave;

'let

'let me never see her more! But O the inquisi-
'tion! O forgive, forgive!'

The priest, molified at the sight of the gold, replied, 'Thou knowest my compassion, but 'thou abusest it, and thy crimes are almost too 'great for mercy. In hope thou wilt amend, 'and transgress so no more, I will forgive thee 'now: but thou must be punished: Hast thou 'no more gold?'——'O, father no more, no 'more! and this I saved to redeem my dear 'child: O let me get my child!——'*What! 'insolent! dost thou presume to capitulate? Thou 'shalt be punished: Instead of getting back thy daugh-'ter, thou shalt bring me thy son, whom I saw yes-'terday, when I bade thee come to confession. The 'boy I blessed, and kissed upon my knee.*'—'O father, 'father, take all the gold, and let my daughter 'remain: But spare my son; he is too young, 'O father, too young for *thee.*'—'*The inqui-'sition!*'——'O take him father, take him, 'take all but spare me; I fly to bring my 'child to thee; O spare me from the inquisi-'tion!'——'*'Tis well, be comforted; thy sins shall 'be forgiven; perhaps, if thou behavest well, thy 'son may also be restored. I fear thou hast for-'gotten thy Christian faith; let me hear thee re-'peat thy creed.*'—The man, somewhat reassured, to hear that he should escape the inquisition, and comforted with the hope of having his son restored, began thus——'I believe that God 'made the world, and all things in it, for my 'lords THE JESUITS; and that I must worship 'him, by obeying them, and saying the prayers 'they direct me to the saints, and the blessed 'virgin, the mother of God, and above all, 'to the great saint IGNATIUS LOYOLA. But

'if

Digitized by Google

'if I disobey their commands in any thing, or 'repine at their service, or think, that I must 'obey the *viceroy* before them, I shall be burned 'to death in the inquisition, *here* and the great 'devil will burn me for ever, after I am dead.'— 'Well, son, *remember and practice thy creed, and 'thy sins shall be forgiven thee: Go and bring the 'boy when it is dark.*'

CHAP. VIII.

The holy father's tenderness to another penitent, who had ravished, murdered, and robbed his own brother's wife. He accepts the spoils as a recompence to the church. He hints a method of preventing the danger of his brother's resentment, and dismisses him with ghostly advice.

THE severity with which the Jesuit required satisfaction for the imaginary faults of the poor *Peruvian*, may, perhaps, lead you to think, that his zeal would be inexorable to real crimes; but the following account will shew you, that it was no such thing, and that he looked upon nothing as a crime, which was not detrimental to the power, or temporal interest, of his society. —The next penitent who approached the *mercy-seat*, was a commander in the army. He advanced with a military intrepidity, and kneeling down in form, 'Father (said he) 'I have 'a long reckoning to make, and some of the ar- 'ticles are rather heavy.' 'My son,' (replied the priest) 'you have had experience of the in- 'dulgence

'dulgence of the church, and that no crimes
'are too black for her mercy, on *proper* peni-
'tence. Proceed then, and open your ailments
'to your phyſician; nor fear the efficacy of his
'medicines.

'You know then, father' (ſaid the penitent)
'that I have long burned with a paſſion for the
'wife of my brother the judge. It was the ſub-
'ject of my laſt confeſſion.' —— 'I remember
'it right well' (replied the father)' and you
'may remember alſo what ghoſtly, yet com-
'fortable advice I gave you, to ſtrive, againſt
'and ſuppreſs it if you could.'—'True, father;
'but I told you then, that I knew it would
'be in vain for me to ſtrive, as I was re-
'ſolved to enjoy her, though at the hazard of
'life'—— 'But, ſon, did I not comfort you,
'by ſaying, that if you found it in vain to
'ſtrive and could not live without her, as
'life was the greateſt good in this world, it was
'juſt that you ſhould preſerve yours, by obtain-
'ing what you was ſo violently ſet upon, but
'always to be careful that you conducted matters
'ſo, as not to give offence by your ſucceſs'——
'Ah! but, father, that was not in my power:
'She was deaf to all my entreaties; and that
'threw me into ſuch deſpair, that, not able to
'wait any longer, I have, this very morning,
'had recourſe to force.'—'That was really bad,
'if it could have been avoided; but as you would
'not have forced her, if ſhe would have com-
'plied willingly, that alters the caſe very much
'in your favour, and perhaps ſhe put you to
'that trouble, only to ſave the appearance of
'her own virtue, and if ſo, you have both acted

'right,

'right, and there is no harm done, provided the 'affair is not diſcloſed.'

'O, father that is the thing; I was afraid of 'that; and as her huſband had always been a fa-'ther to me, and all my future hopes depend-'ed on him, I ſo greatly dreaded her telling him, 'that, to prevent it, as ſoon as I had enjoyed 'her, I cut her throat.'

'Murder, O fie; it is an heinous crime: 'blood calls for blood: your caſe is terrible.'— 'I feared ſo, father: but I depended on your 'tenderneſs; and I did not think it reaſonable, 'that I ſhould have all the pleaſure of the crime, 'and you only the trouble of forgiving, I ſtripped 'her of *theſe* jewels, which give me leave to offer 'you.'

'You are a prudent man, my ſon; I thought 'you would act with diſcretion. I accept the 'jewels, as a peace offering to the *holy church*, 'for your ſins; and as the value of them (in-'deed they are coſtly gems) proves the ſincerity 'of your repentance, I ſhall not heſitate to pro-'nounce your ſins forgiven.'

'* For though adultery is a great ſin, and 'in this caſe aggravated by rape and inceſt, yet, 'as you ſay, it was not becauſe ſhe was the 'wife of another man, and eſpecially your bro-'ther, that you deſire to enjoy her, but merely 'as ſhe was a beautiful woman, therefore the 'adultery and inceſt come in but by *accident*; and 'then as you raviſhed her only becauſe ſhe 'would not comply, the ſin of the rape is cer-'tainly her's, as I ſaid before, for if I force a 'man to commit a crime, I am guilty of that

'crime,

* See the caſuiſtical Divinity of the Jeſuits, throughout.

Digitized by Google

'crime, and not he: And again, though mur-
'der is a moſt heinous ſin, yet as you killed
'her, not merely to indulge a murderous in-
'tent, but to prevent her diſcovering your hav-
'ing forced her, and ſo ruining you, the inten-
'tion quite alters the nature of the fact, and
'makes it but ſelf-preſervation, which is the
'firſt law of nature. And laſtly, As you took
'the jewels, not with a deſign to rob her, but
'to offer them to the *church*, and accordingly
'have brought them, that concluſion ſanctifies
'the whole action, and makes your peace with
'Heaven.

'For know, my ſon, that crimes which re-
'ſpect *man only*, as in your caſe, rape, adultery,
'inceſt, murder, and robbery, though bad in
'themſelves, 'tis true, yet are a pleaſure to the
'church to forgive, to a faithful and penitent
'ſon, *who believes all her doctrines, and pays due*
'*obedience to her clergy, the vicegerents of God on*
'*earth, the receivers of her revenues, and diſpenſers*
'*of her favours and vengeance; to whom all earthly*
'*power is ſubſervient, who are the kings of kings,*
'*and lords of the world.*——This, my ſon, is
'the doctrine of our holy church, as delivered
'by the moſt learned fathers of our order, in
'the belief of which you will be ſafe from all
'the powers of hell: do what you will, while
'you pay faith and obedience to the church, ſhe
'will pardon all your ſins.'———.

When he had concluded his inſtructions, with this pious exhortation, and ſealed his abſolution with a bleſſing, the purified ſaint aroſe, and ſaid, 'Holy father, thou haſt ſet my ſoul at eaſe, 'with regard to *hereafter*, but ſtill I fear for 'this world. It unfortunately happened, that

'I was

'I was seen in the fact by a servant who escaped 'me, or I should have charmed her silence 'too; and now I apprehend she will inform my 'brother.'—'This is unlucky, most unlucky, '(replied the priest) I know not what to advise: 'I am utterly at a loss: if you should prevent 'her malice, and accuse her of the fact.'—— 'O, but father, the rape; there may be ap- 'pearances of that, which would disprove my 'charge against a woman.'——'Mistake me 'not my son, I do not advise any such thing! 'Heaven forbid that I should advise to bear false 'witness against an innocent life; I am utterly 'at a loss.'—'Suppose, father, I should still 'strive to prevent my fears, by taking off my 'brother, as I cannot find her: this is the only 'way to make me easy; ha, father; is not 'that an happy thought? I wished it had occurred 'sooner, and then I should have given you but 'the one trouble.——'Why, truly, son, the 'dead neither make nor receive discoveries, and 'self-preservation will certainly justify any thing, 'as I have said before: but I must not advise 'you; your own genius is ready, and can im- 'prove an hint; I must know nothing, till the 'affair is done: all I can say is, that work un- 'finished had better never have been begun.

'Adieu, my son, my blessing waits on all 'your undertakings. But be sure to hold the 'indulgent mercy of the church in grateful re- 'membrance.'——

The officer went away, happy in having lightened the burthen that was upon his conscience, and big with the pious project of making the murder of his brother the first fruits of his regeneration.

Digitized by Google

generation. He was the laſt *penitent* of that morning, and, as ſoon as he was gone, his ghoſtly director retired to mortify his appetites in the refectory of the convent.

CHAP. IX.

The father's rage on hearing that his penitent had ſecreted ſome of the jewels. The officer is purſued by his brother to the convent, whether he flies for ſanctuary. His reception from the father, and the terms of their reconciliation. The father ſends away the judge in a fright. The officer is received into the ſociety.

THE great value of the jewels, which the officer had preſented to my maſter, took up ſo much of his thoughts, that as ſoon as he had finiſhed his collation, he retired to his cell, to mediate on the farther advantages he might make of this affair.

While he was in this pleaſing employment, another eccleſiaſtic entered, to acquaint him with the murder and robbery of the judge's wife, and, among other particulars of the ſtory, ſaid, that her crucifix, thought to be the richeſt in *lay poſſeſſion* in all *Peru*, had been taken from her.—— 'That crucifix!' (exclaimed my maſter, ſtarting, for he knew it well, having long paid his devotions to it, and now to be *cheated* thus of it, when he thought it ſo *juſtly* his due, provoked him almoſt to madneſs.) 'That crucifix taken

'too;

'too; Damned! murderous! deceitful villain!
'villain, on all ſides! but I will be revenged!'

The other prieſt underſtood not what he meant, and was juſt going to enquire, when in ruſhed the captain, all aghaſt, 'O father! father!' (ſaid he, as ſoon as he could ſpeak) ſanctuary! 'ſanctuary! my brother is at the gate, with all 'the officers of juſtice!'——At this the father grin'd an inſulting ſmile, and beckoning to the other prieſt to withdraw, 'Wretch (ſaid he) 'thou *ſacrilegious* wretch! how could'ſt thou 'dare to enter theſe holy walls, violated by thy 'guilt? Did'ſt thou not fear the fate of *Ananias* 'and *Sapphira!*——As thou did'ſt deceive me, 'with thy feigned penitence, and haſt ly'd to 'the Lord, in concealing what thou had'ſt moſt 'juſtly devoted to him; I revoke the abſolution 'I gave thee, and will deliver thee too juſtice, 'to receive the puniſhment due to thy crimes, 'theſe holy walls afford no ſanctuary to *ſacri-* '*lege!*'

The poor criminal ſtood confounded at reproaches, which he dared not interrupt, though he could not comprehend the cauſe or meaning of them. At length, when the prieſt had exclaimed himſelf out of breath, the trembling wretch replied, 'O father! what can have kindled thy 'wrath againſt me? I have committed no crime, 'ſince thy abſolution purged my ſoul! I was 'only going towards my brother's houſe, when 'I met him, and the ſervant with him, with all 'the officers of juſtice, in ſearch of me, on 'which I fled directly to you for ſanctuary.' 'I grant no ſanctuary to ſacrilege.'——'What 'ſacrilege, O father:——'The crucifix, de-'ceitful wretch! Where is thy ſiſter's crucifix?

'Haſt

'Haſt thou not defrauded the church of her due? 'Did'ſt thou not ſay, that thou tookeſt thy ſiſ- 'ter's jewels, only to make a peace-offering 'for thy ſins, and then to ſecret, thus, the moſt 'valuable part of them! *This is defrauding the 'labourer of his hire!* This is defrauding the 'church of her right, without making the pro- 'per compenſations! And what can be greater 'ſacrilege!'

Juſt at theſe words, a knocking at the gate awoke the *penitent* from his amaze, and made him apprehend that he had not a minute to loſe; he therefore, with the readieſt preſence of mind, replied,—'The crucifix! father! you aſtoniſh 'me! did I not give it to you?'——And then putting his hand into his boſom, and pulling it out with a look of ſurprize, he reached it to him. —'Forgive, O father, (ſaid he) the crime of in- 'advertency! I meant not to have kept it from 'you, but only overlooked it, in my confuſion! 'accept it! accept all I am maſter of, and ſave 'my life.'

'Son (replied the father, ſoftening his voice, 'and taking the crucifix) I am glad thou waſt 'not *intentionally* guilty of ſo unpardonable an 'offence! I believe, and accept thy excuſe. Be 'comforted, therefore, my ſon, thy ſins are for- 'given.' 'O but, father, the officers of juſ- 'tice.'——'What officers, what juſtice dares 'attempt to ſhew her face within theſe walls? 'Thou art *my* penitent, I have abſolved thee, 'and I will defend thee. Sit down, and com- 'poſe thy ſpirits, while I repel this bold intru- 'ſion on the peace and privilege of theſe holy 'walls.'

Saving

Digitized by Google

Saying thus, the father went to the gate of the convent, where ſtood the judge, diſplaying the guilt of the fugitive to the holy fathers, to engage them to refuſe him ſanctuary, and give him up to juſtice. But my maſter ſoon ſtopped him, 'Ceaſe (ſaid he, with a low voice, and 'down caſt meditative look) diſturb not the 'peace of theſe holy walls. The man you ſeek 'is *my* penitent. He has made ſatisfaction to 'the church, and reconciled himſelf to Heaven. 'I come this moment from giving him the ſeal 'of abſolution. Diſturb not the raptures of 'his ſoul, that is now joining with the angelic 'choirs, in the hymns of joy raiſed in heaven 'for his repentance. Depart in peace.'

'How, father, (exclaimed the judge) can a 'wretch, guilty of ſuch crimes, ſo ſoon have 'made his peace! He has deceived you, father; 'he has not told you half his guilt: rape, inceſt, 'adultery, and murder! can *they* be thus for-'given? So eaſy pardons but encourage vice.'— 'And who art thou, preſumptuous man! (re-'plied the father, raiſing his voice, and putting 'on an air of authority) and who art thou, 'that dareſt thus to call the power of God's holy 'church in queſtion? What faith, or rather 'what *hereſy* has taught thee this preſumption? 'Doſt thou meaſure the divine authority of our 'unerring tribunal by the weak rules of thy 'blind law? Are not the keys of heaven ours; 'and have we not the power to looſe as well as 'bind? but I ſhall not argue more with thee '*here*; there is a tribunal proper for ſuch *opinions* 'as thine; there try if thy knowledge of the 'laws will juſtify thy hereſies; there thou art 'not judge.'

Digitized by Google

The first mention of heresy had struck such a terror into the heart of the poor judge, that he was for some moments unable to reply. At last, recollecting himself a little, 'I submit, O father '(said he) I am no heretic; I have no *opinions* 'but what I learn from the holy church, whose 'power I acknowledge in all its divine plenitude.'—'Tis well, (replied the priest) 'tis 'well; depart in peace, and to morrow I will 'visit thee, and examine the state of thy con-'science.'

The judge then making a profound reverence, withdrew without a murmur, and the triumphant father returned to his penitent. 'My son, (said 'he) thine enemies are defeated. Thy rest is 'secure *here*. But such is their power, and so 'strong the general abhorrence that pursues thy '*late* guilt, that it will not be safe for thee ever 'to leave this sanctuary.'—'O father, must 'I be confined for ever here?'——'I said not 'so, my son: there is a way for thee to go in 'triumph out, above the power of thy present 'persecutors.'———'O name it, father.'—— 'Take our vows, Heaven has blessed thee 'with a fertile genius, and steeled thy soul with 'fortitude. These talents must not be buried; 'an account will be required of them; and 'where can they be put to proper use, except 'in the service of the Donor, in his church? 'there they will raise thee to that rank and 'power, which thou seest us enjoy. I see thou 'yieldest. Resist not the motions of the holy 'spirit. I receive thee into the fold. I salute 'thee, brother. From this moment of thine 'election mayest thou date thy entrance into the 'highest honours of this world. The day ap-

'proaches,

Digitized by Google

'proaches, when thy military knowledge and 'valour may alſo be called into action. Great 'events are ripening in the womb of time!——' I yield, O father, (replied the penitent) I re-'ceive thine offer with due ſubmiſſion and re-'ſpect; and from this moment dedicate my 'valour, ſkill, and every power of my ſoul and 'body to the implicit ſervice of thine holy 'order.'———'It is the hand of Heaven, that 'leads thee, no longer ſon, but brother. I will 'go an acquaint our brethern with thy *miracu-'lous* converſion and election. Thou haſt no 'more to do but to make thy will, and bequeath 'all thy wealth to our order.'—'*Bequeath*, my 'father, muſt I die?'——'But to the world, 'brother to live with us.'——'But I have no-'thing to bequeath.'——'Leave that to us. Do 'you only give all your fortune, in the hands 'of your brother, to our ſociety, in conſequence 'of your admiſſion; and let us find that fortune. 'I go. The bell rings for *veſpers*. I ſhall ſend 'our notary to you; and when that is done, we 'will reſtore our exhauſted ſpirits with a ſlight 'repaſt in the refectory, where I will introduce 'thee to our brethren.'

In a word, all things were executed, and the new brother admitted in proper time into the order, of which he has ſince riſen to be one of the brighteſt ornaments. And the judge, to avoid the imputation of hereſey, which his *implied* doubt of the church's ſanctuary had given my maſter the hint of, was glad to pay half his wealth to the ſociety, as the fortune of his pious brother.

Soon after this affair was thus happily compleated, my maſter, that he might openly ſhew

Digitized by Google

his adoration of me to the world, had me made into a crucifix, in which ſhape I was faſtened to his *roſary*, and there publicly received that adoration from the knee, which before was paid me only in the heart.—A repetition of all the occurrences I ſaw in the ſervice of this maſter would be unneceſſary, as the two I have related gave a general idea of them.

CHAP. X.

CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice, and embarks for* Europe *in an* Engliſh *man of war. The cauſe and manner of his coming that way. The occurrences of his paſſage. On his arrival in* England *he is ſent by his maſter to ſettle ſome miſtakes in the voyage.*

I WAS heartily ſick of ſuch a ſcene, when the time came for ſending me into theſe parts of the world, where ſcarcity enhances my value, and makes my power more extenſive. There being a war between *Spain* and *England* at that time, *about the liberty of cutting ſticks upon a deſert ſhore*, it was neceſſary to ſecure a ſafe paſſage for the treaſure, by eſtabliſhing a right underſtanding with the commander of an *Engliſh* man of war, which was cruizing in thoſe ſeas. It fell to my lot to go on this errand in the ſhape of a doubloon, into which I was caſt, to ſave the profanation which a crucifix muſt ſuffer in the hands of heretics.

There was ſome little addreſs requiſite to conduct this affair with the captain, in ſuch a manner

Digitized by Google

ner as to keep it ſecret from his officers, to gain all of whom would have been too expenſive; beſides that he would never truſt his *ſacred* honour to the fidelity of ſo many. But this was readily adjuſted. The refinements of modern politeneſs having ſoftened the natural ferocity of a ſtate of war, and admitting an intercourſe of courteſy between parties who profeſs to ſeek each other's deſtruction, the *Spaniſh* governor ſent out a boat with his compliments to the *Engliſh* captain, with a large ſupply of freſh proviſions, fruits, wine, *&c.*

This neceſſarily produced a return of civility from the well bred captain; and in this intercourſe were the terms of his connivance ſettled, as the ſeal of which *I* was delivered to him among a very large number of my fellows, who honourably punctual to his promiſe, at the appointed time, ſailed away from that ſtation *in queſt of ſome ſhips of the enemy's which he expected to meet elſewhere*, and did not return till the *Spaniſh* treaſure was beyond his reach.

As this was a compliment of great conſequence to the *Spaniards*, the captain had been ſo handſomely conſidered for it, that his deſires were ſatisfied, and he only wiſhed to be ſafe at home, to enjoy the wealth he had ſo happily acquired. Often would he take me out, (for the beauty of my new impreſſion had ſtruck his Eye, and gained me the honour of being kept in his purſe) often, I ſay, would he take me out of his purſe, and, gazing on me till his eyes watered, 'O thou end of all my toils and dangers! '(would he ſay) thou crown of all my hopes! 'now I have obtained thee I am content! Let 'others ſeek that phantom, glory, I have in thee

Digitized by Google

'the more ſolid reward, for which I always 'ſought, nor ſhall any thing tempt me to ha-'zard being ſeparated from thee.' A reſolution which he had an opportunity of ſhewing in all its ſtrength a few days after, when a ſhip appeared, which he thought to be a *Spaniſh* man of war.

As ours was a ſhip of force, and all the officers (except the captain) were very poor; and as the *Spaniſh* ſhips are always richly laden with treaſure in thoſe ſeas, the crew was in the higheſt ſpirits at this fight, and made every thing ready to attack her, with the moſt eager alacrity. But the caſe was quite different with the captain. He was now as rich as he deſired, and dreaded the loſs of that wealth which he had ſo long laboured for. He, therefore, retired into his cabbin, while the lieutenants were *clearing ſhip*, and taking *me* out of his purſe, with a look of tenderneſs that brought the tears into his eyes, 'And ſhall I hazard the loſs of thee (he cried) 'the object, the reward of a life of toil and 'danger? Shall I ſacrifice the only good of life 'to that chimera, honour? to that bubble lighter 'than air, and more variable than the wind, the 'intereſt of my country? What is honour with-'out wealth? What is a country to him who 'has nothing in it? Let the poor fight for mo-'ney, I have enough! let the ambitious fight 'for glory, I deſpiſe the empty name. Let 'thoſe who have a property in their country 'fight for it, I have none, nor can have, nor 'any of its bleſſings, without thee; and there-'fore will not venture thy loſs for any ſuch vain 'conſiderations.'

As

As ſoon as he had formed this prudent reſolution, he claſped me to his heart, kiſſed me, and returned me into his purſe, juſt as the lieutenant came in to tell him, they could now *make* the ſhip, which muſt be vaſtly rich, ſhe was ſo deep in the water. My maſter made no reply, but taking a teleſcope in his hand, he went upon the quarter-deck, and viewing her for ſome time, with great apparent earneſtneſs, 'You are all 'miſtaken (ſaid he) in that ſhip! rich indeed! 'and ſo ſhe may remain for us. That ſhip is 'a firſt rate man of war by her ſize: and as for 'her depth in the water, ſhe is only brought 'down by her guns, which are fifty-two pounders at leaſt. *Put about* the ſhip, and make all 'ſail poſſible from her. I am anſwerable for his 'majeſty's ſhip committed to my care, and will 'not ſacrifice her againſt ſuch odds. Her weight 'of metal would blow us out of the water. Beſides, I have a packet on board, and muſt not 'go out of my way: *about ſhip*, and away di'rectly, I ſay.

The officers ſtood aghaſt at this ſpeech, that diſappointed all their golden hopes. They urged, they beſeeched, they remonſtrated, that it was impoſſible ſhe could be what he ſaid: they inſiſted that the colour of her ſails, and the heavineſs of her going, proved her to be a ſhip of trade that had been long at ſea; and as for her bulk, it only encouraged them to hope ſhe would prove the better prize, as all the ſhips that carry the treaſure are very large; that they had obſerved they *wronged* her ſo much, they could go round her if they pleaſed; and begged only that they might be permitted to take a nearer view of her, which they were confident would prove her

Digitized by Google

to be what they ſaid. They alledged the opportunity of making all their fortunes; the honour, the intereſt of their country. They begged, ſwore, ſtormed, and wept; but all in vain. The captain had taken his reſolution; and would vouchſafe no other anſwer than a repetition of what he had ſaid before, 'That he was accountable for his majeſty's ſhip, and would not hazard her, to gratify them: beſides, the delay of the packet he had on board, might be of worſe conſequence than the taking of ſuch a ſhip (ſhould ſhe even be what they ſaid, though he was certain to the contrary) would make amends for. And that, as to going nearer to her the length of her guns would enable them to drive every ſhot through and through his ſhip, at a diſtance that his could never reach her from; though, if they ſhould be mad enough to engage her, his *ſmall* ſhot could never pierce ſuch mountains of timber as her ſides were barricaded with.' And ſo, as his power was abſolute, they were obliged to ſubmit, and *off he ſheered.*

It is impoſſible to deſcribe the diſtraction which this affair threw our ſhip into. The officers acted all the inconſiſtent outrages of madneſs. The men chewed the *quid*, damned their eyes and limbs for their bad luck, and went to work as uſual; while ſeveral poor ſick wretches, whoſe ſpirits had been ſo raiſed by the hopes of ſuch a prize, that they had forgot their complaints, and exerted all their ſtrength, to aſſiſt in the engagement, now ſunk under the weight of the diſappointment, and crawled back, many of them to die in their hammocs.

But the captain had carried his point, and regarded nothing elſe: though indeed he was ſomewhat

Digitized by Google

what diſconcerted a few days after, when he learned from another ſhip, that ſhe really was a *regiſter* ſhip of immenſe value, and ſo weakened by hard weather and ſickneſs, that ſhe could not have attempted any reſiſtance, but had prepared to ſtrike the moment ſhe ſaw us. This information added ſuch fuel to the rage that inflamed the officers before, that all intercourſe between them and their captain was entirely broke off, ſo that I became his ſole companion.

This laſted all the while we were at a diſtance from *England*; but as we drew near home, the captain's ſtiffneſs began to bend, and he made ſeveral advances to a reconciliation and general amneſty, as he could not but feel ſome apprehenſions for his conduct from his ſuperiors. But all was in vain. The thought of returning in poverty, inſtead of that wealth which he had diſappointed them of, kept up their reſentments, and they determined to complain, if only for the ſatisfaction of revenge.

This convinced my maſter, that methods muſt be taken to obviate their attempts, or he might run a greater hazard at home than he had intended to avoid abroad. He therefore prudently concluded, that the ſame argument which had been ſo powerful with himſelf, would be the moſt effectual to vindicate what he had done with others, and that it would be better to ſhare the ſpoil, than riſk the loſs of all.

For this intent, as ſoon as he arrived in *England*, he took *me* from his purſe once more, and looking earneſtly at me for ſome moments, 'We muſt part ſaid he, (with a ſigh) we muſt 'part! but I hope to good purpoſe. Thou 'only waſt the cauſe of that conduct which

'now gives me fear; exert therefore thy in-'fluence equally, where I now send thee, and 'thou wilt excuse my fault, if it is one.' Tears, at the thought of losing me, here choaked his utterrance. He gave me a last kiss, and sent me directly away, in company with a considerable number more, to mediate his peace.

CHAP. XI.

The good consequences of a right understanding between certain persons. CHRYSAL'S *reflections on his first seeing the public offices in* London. *His master visits a gentleman, who in the vehemence of his rage against certain abuses, hits himself a violent slap on the face. The necessity of decency, and the methods of supporting it, instanced in the history of a pretty fellow.*

AS the delicate nature of this transaction required some address, he entrusted the management of it to his purser, who had convinced him by many instances, of his sagacity in the methods of obtaining an influence over the great.

As soon as my new master arrived in *London*, his first care was to execute the commission for which *we* had been given to him; but the person, to whom his application was to be made, happening to be out of town for a few days, that he might not lose any time, he proceeded to settle some affairs of his own; in the course of which, I had an opportunity of seeing into some part of the secrets of his mysterious business.

The

Digitized by Google

The profeſſed motive for his coming to town, was to ſettle his own, and paſs his captains accounts, between which there was a connection not neceſſary to be known to any other: for though my late maſter did not think it conſiſtent with his dignity to be too familiar with his officers, and generally ſlighted their opinion, if only to ſhew his own ſuperiority and keep them at a proper diſtance, with him and his purſer the caſe is quiet otherwiſe, the beſt underſtanding always ſubſiſting between them, and every affair being concerned with the greateſt harmony, to their mutual advantage: an agreement, which, beſide the comfort and convenience of it to themſelves, had this happy influence over the reſt of the ſhips company, that it kept them, if not eaſy, at leaſt quiet, from all murmurings, and complaints of bad proviſions, ſhort weights, and ſuch-like *imaginary* grievances, which the reſtleſs temper of ſeamen is too apt to make the cauſe of much trouble to the purſer, and diſturbance to the captain, when theſe happen not to agree between themſelves. But, as the contrary was the caſe here, their common intereſt animated the aſſiduity of my maſter, and made him go directly to the ſeveral officers and contractors, with whom his buſineſs lay, to prepare every thing in proper order for public inſpection.

On my firſt going to theſe public offices, every thing gave me pleaſure. There was ſuch an appearance of regularity in all the proceedings, of eaſe and affluence in the officers, that I could not help ſaying to myſelf, 'Happy ſtate, whoſe 'meaneſt ſervants are gentlemen! whoſe buſi-'neſs is reduced to a ſyſtem, above danger of 'confuſion or abuſe!' But a nearer view ſhewed

Digitized by Google

ſhewed things in another light. The firſt perſon my maſter went to, was the gentleman who ſupplied him with thoſe kind of cloathing for the ſeamen, which are by theſe merry poor fellows emphatically called *ſlops*. As he was juſt going to dinner, my maſter accepted of his invitation, and ſat down with him. A round or two of loyal toaſts to the ſucceſs of the navy, and continuance of the war, having waſhed down their fare, and refreſhed their ſpirits after the fatigue of a full meal, they proceeded to buſineſs. 'I come, Sir, 'ſaid my maſter) to ſettle the account of the 'laſt cruize. Here it is: you ſee moſt of the 'articles are gone off pretty well: but I muſt 'tell you, that you are more obliged to ſome of 'your friends for that, than you are aware of 'perhaps; for if I had not prevailed on the cap-'tain, to let the alehouſe-keepers and gin-wo-'men come on board, and keep the ſlop-ſellers 'off, when the men received their pay, on go-'ing out, you would have had but a blank liſt 'of it. But, by this management, the fellows 'ſpent all their money in drink, and then ne-'ceſſity drove them to me for cloaths.'

'Here is to the captain's good health, (anſwer-'ed the other) and that I may ſoon ſee him at 'the head of the navy: I am very much obliged 'to you and him, and ſhall conſider your friend-'ſhip properly. But is there no way of prevent-'ing thoſe pedlars from intruding thus upon 'us? I am reſolved I will try: I believe I can 'make an intereſt, (you underſtand me) that 'will procure me an order to exclude them: 'at leaſt if I cannot do that, I will inſiſt on 'raiſing my terms; for every branch of buſineſs 'is now ſo loaded with preſents and perquiſites,

'that

'that there is ſcarce any thing to be got. A 'man who goes to a public office, to receive 'money, runs the gauntlope through ſo many of 'them, that, if he does not make up his ac- 'counts in a very maſterly manner indeed, he 'will have but little to ſhew, for his pains, in 'the end.'—'Very true (replied my maſter) 'I have had experience of what you ſay, this 'very morning. You know it is ſome years 'ſince I have been in town before: I was there- 'fore quite ſurpriſed at the gay appearance of 'every clerk in the offices. Our midſhipmen 'on the paying off of a ſhip, are nothing to 'them! ſo, thought I to myſelf: this is very 'well! Such fine gentlemen as theſe will never 'ſtoop to take the little perquiſites which their 'ſhabby predeceſſors were ſo eager for: they 'cannot want them. Accordingly, as ſoon as 'I had done my buſineſs, I was preparing to 'make an handſome ſpeech, and a leg, and ſo 'walk off; but I was ſoon undeceived; and 'found, to my no ſmall aſtoniſhment, that, if 'the caſe was altered, it was no way for the 'better, for me: the preſent fine gentlemen be- 'ing to the full as rapacious as the former ſhab- 'by fellows, and with this addition to the evil, 'that their expectations were raiſed, in propor- 'tion to their appearance, ſo that they muſt 'have a crown, where the others were ſatisfied 'with a ſhilling.'

'And how can it be otherwiſe, (returned the 'other) while the principals ſet them ſuch an 'example of extravagance, and inforce obedi- 'ence to it in the manner they do: for though 'their own exorbitant ſalaries enable them to 'live with the luxury of aldermen at home,

'and

'and make the appearance of courtiers abroad, 'how can they think, that their hackney under- 'lings ſhall be able to change their dreſs with 'the court, and appear with all the preciſe fop- 'pery of pretty fellows, if they have not clan- 'deſtine ways of getting money: and that this 'is the caſe, I can give you an inſtance not to 'be contradicted.

'Perhaps you may remember a little boy that 'ran about the houſe here, when you were 'in town laſt. His mother was ſervant to my 'firſt wife: you cannot forget black-eyed *Nan*: 'who was the father is nothing to my ſtory, 'but I took care of the boy. When he grew 'up, I thought the beſt thing I could do for 'him, was to get him into one of the public 'offices, for he was too ſoft for my own buſi- 'neſs, and this I imagined would ſharpen him, 'and 50l. a year keep him from being an ex- 'pence to me. Accordingly, I got him ad- 'mitted as an additional clerk, in this buſy 'time; and, that his appearance ſhould not 'ſhame my recommendation, I added a *London*- 'made ſuit to his country wardrobe, which I 'thought good enough for him to wear every 'day.

'Well; thus equipped, to the office he went, 'as good-looking a lad as ever came from a '*Yorkſhire* Academy, which had been the height 'of his education. But I ſoon found that I had 'been out of my reckoning; for, going with him 'to introduce him to the head-clerk, whom I 'had before ſpoken properly to in his behalf, I 'found the whole office in deep mourning, 'which, as it had been ordered only for the 'court, and was to hold but for a fortnight 'longer,

'longer, I had never thought of dreſſing him in; 'but I ſoon found that I had not a proper opi- 'nion of the conſequence of the place.—For the 'head clerk gave me a friendly hint, that it was 'expected, that all the clerks in his majeſty's 'offices ſhould ſhew the decent reſpect of con- 'forming to the dreſs of the court on theſe ſo- 'lemn occaſions.—I could not help exclaiming, 'I believe a little too ſhortly, What, Sir, upon 'a ſalary of 50l. a year?—Sir (replied he) no- 'body is forced to take that ſalary; and they 'who do not like the rules of the office are at 'liberty to leave it: and then turned off upon 'his heel.'—'I beg your pardon, Sir, (ſaid I, 'ſeeing my error) it was an overſight of mine; 'but it ſhall be amended.'———'The ſooner 'the better, Sir (anſwered he) for his lordſhip 'will be in the office to-morrow, and he muſt 'not ſee any thing ſo irregular; and, pray, Sir '(turning to the lad) get that fleece on your 'head ſhorn a little (his hair flowed down, in 'modeſt ringlets, on his ſhoulders) and ſtrive to 'appear ſomething like a *gentleman.*'

'I ſaw it was in vain to ſay any thing, and 'ſo took the boy away with me; and had him 'equipped, next day, in all the faſhionable trap- 'pings of woe, with his hair ſhorn indeed, 'and tied up in a bag, by a *French* barber, 'for I would not ſtand for a trifle when my hand 'was in, and then went with him myſelf, be- 'ing deſirous to ſee how he would be received 'in his new appearance; but, alas! I had for- 'got that indiſpenſable article of a gentleman's 'dreſs, a ſword, which I was therefore obliged 'to ſend out for directly. In a fortnight's time, 'the order for the court's going into ſecond

'mourning

'mourning put me to the ſame expence over-
'again; for the rules of decency were not to be
'diſpenſed with; and then, in a month after,
'it was as neceſſary to trim his light grey frock
'with a ſilver edging of coxcomb, that he might
'not appear worſe than his fellows; all which,
'with many other as neceſſary *et cæteras*, by the
'end of the firſt quarter, conſumed his year's
'ſalary.

'This enraged me to that degree, that I was
'going to take him away directly; but the boy
'had by this time got ſome inſight into the
'ways of the place, and prevented me, by ſay-
'ing, that if I would try, but for another
'quarter, he was ſatisfied that his perquiſites
'would more than defray all ſuch expences;
'and ſo I find they do, for though he is now as
'ſmart well-dreſſed a young fellow as any about
'town, he has never ſince troubled me for a
'ſhilling: nay, more than all this, aſſures me,
'there are ſome of his fellow-clerks who keep
'footmen and horſes, and have routs and con-
'certs at their houſes, as regularly as people of
'the firſt rank; and all by the perquiſites of a
'place of fifty pounds a year.

'Now as all thoſe perquiſites are draw-backs
'upon us; as I ſaid before, we cannot carry on
'the buſineſs on the uſual terms, if we do not
'bring up our loſs in the quality of the goods,
'for it would be abſurd to expect, that we
'ſhould lower our living to let ſuch fellows run
'away with the profit of our induſtry. In
'ſhort, my wife's chariot ſhall not be put down,
'nor will I deny myſelf a bottle of claret to
'give you, or any other friend, to ſave all the
'ſeamen in *Britain* from periſhing with cold:

'Charity

'Charity begins at home; I will inſiſt upon 'having thoſe pedlars prevented from interlop- 'ing upon our trade; and ſo, Sir, my ſervice 'to you.'

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL's maſter gives his friend ſome hints, that make him lower his note. An uncommon piece of generoſity returned more politely than could be expected from the parties. An odd ſtory of an unfaſhionable ſteward. The ſucceſs of CHRYSAL's *mediation in favour of his late maſter.*

MY maſter had heard him out, though not with the greateſt patience, and now taking the opportunity of his ſtopping to drink, 'All 'this may be true (ſaid he) and what you pro- 'poſe might poſſibly have been done, and with 'the effect you deſire, ſome time ago: but 'matters are altered a good deal, at preſent, 'both among the gentlemen of the navy, and 'here too, as I am told: and indeed, in reſpect 'to this affair, thoſe things are made ſo infa- 'mouſly bad, and rated ſo high, that no-body 'can ſpeak in the defence of them: nay, it 'even goes almoſt againſt my own conſcience 'to *utter* them; for, only think with yourſelf, 'what a barefaced impoſition it is, to make a 'poor wretch pay ſeven ſhillings for a coarſe 'rotten jacket, when even a *Jew* ſhall ſell him 'a ſound one, and of finer ſtuff, for four and 'ſixpence; and every thing elſe at the ſame 'rate.

Digitized by Google

'rate. In ſhort, this point is ſo over-ſtrained, 'that it will probably overturn the whole trade, 'in the end; for ſeveral of the captains are ſo 'provoked at it, that they take every method 'they can to prevent the men from taking up 'any thing from us: particularly that which I 'hinted before, of keeping off the alehouſe-'keepers, and ſuch people, and encouraging 'ſlop-ſellers to come on board, when the men 'are paying, by which means they buy good 'comfortable cloaths, at half the price of our 'rotten traſh: Indeed, one of them went ſo far, 'as to buy in a parcel of good ſhoes, at his own 'expence, and make a preſent of a pair a piece 'to all his *top-men*, when they were going out 'on a cruize, as they had ſpent their money, 'and could not buy for themſelves, and our 'ſhoes were ſo bad, that the firſt time they went 'aloft with them, after they were wet, the ratt-'lings tore them all to pieces, ſo that it was a 'common thing to ſee a man come down bare-'footed, who had gone up with a new pair of 'ſhoes on. Though it is but juſt to comfort 'you, with an account of the return which he 'met with for his kindneſs, which was no leſs 'than a *round-robin* * to the lords of the admi-'ralty, for his refuſing to let them go aſhore, 'and ſpend their money, in the ſame manner, 'next time they came in.'

'And ſuch a return may their officiouſneſs 'always meet (replied the other) for meddling 'with matters which do not concern them: 'cannot

* The name that ſeamen call their complaints againſt their captain; it is taken from the manner of their ſigning them, which is in a circle, ſo that there is no knowing who ſigns firſt.

Digitized by Google

'cannot they be content with their own large 'gains, without interfering to hinder others? But 'I see how it is: the ſpirit of patriotiſm has 'got into them too, forſooth, and they muſt be 'ſhewing their regard to the public! What an 'evil effect will the bad example of one man 'have! There was a time, when they would not 'have dared to do this. To ſay the truth, my 'friend, this is not the firſt alarm we have re-'ceived on this head; though what to do about 'it, we cannot tell: indeed, I believe we muſt 'e'en mend our hands; which, as half a loaf 'is better than no bread, hard as it is upon us, 'is preferable to loſing the trade quite; in the 'mean time, I am obliged to you and your cap-'tain for your friendſhip, and hope you will ac-'cept of *this* return.' They then proceeded to ſettle their accounts, as ſoon as which were finiſhed, my maſter took his leave, and went on with his buſineſs, which was exactly of the ſame nature, and concluded in the ſame way, with every perſon whom they dealt with.

As ſoon as theſe tranſactions were ended, his next care was to paſs his captain's accounts, which he alſo ſucceeded in, without any diffi-culty, tho' for this he was more indebted to the chance of a lucky minute, than he had appre-hended. For they were no ſooner cloſed, than an affair happened that gave a turn, entirely new, to the whole courſe of buſineſs, in that channel.

When the accounts of the next captain came to be examined, the clerk glancing his eye cur-ſorily over them, in the uſual manner, on look-ing at the amount, 'There muſt be ſome miſ-'take here' (ſaid he)——'How ſo, Sir (ſaid 'the captain, who was preſent) let me look at

'the

'the account, if you pleaſe. No, Sir, there is 'no miſtake I believe.——Pray where do you 'mean?'——'In the caſting it up, Sir, (an-'ſwered the clerk) you ſee, the amount is made 'to be but 800l.'——'Nor ſhould it be more '(replied the captain) I ſummed up the account 'myſelf, and theſe figures are of my own writ-'ing.'—How can that poſſibly be, Sir (returned 'the clerk in a ſurprize) but 800l. for all the 'repairs, *wear and tear*, of a man of war, on 'ſuch a ſtation, for four years! I ſuppoſe then, 'Sir, the ſhip had a thorough repair going out, 'and wants the like now! To be ſure, it can be 'done better and cheaper here, than abroad, and 'therefore you were in the right to bring her 'home to get it.'—'Not at all, Sir, (added the 'captain) that was not the caſe: ſhe had no 'thorough repair going out, and is come home in 'better order than ſhe went, as this return of the 'officers of the yard ſhews.'—'*Good God! Sir, 'how did you manage?*'——'To the beſt of my 'judgment, Sir; I laid out nothing but what I 'thought neceſſary, and I charged nothing but 'what I laid out: I mean not to arraign the 'conduct of others: I only ſpeak for myſelf. In 'theſe caſes, I look upon a man as a ſteward to 'the public! and I ſhould think it as great diſ-'honeſty to betray, or break that truſt, as to 'wrong a private perſon.'

This ſpeech was heard with aſtoniſhment, and returned with a cold compliment, as it came too home to many, to meet general approbation; however, the affair neceſſarily had an effect not very agreeable to ſome preſent; for, the next captain's accounts ariſing to near four times the ſum of the laſt, ſuch an immediate precedent made

made the difference ſo glaring, that it was impoſſible to avoid putting a ſtop to them, and ſo he was mulcted his whole four years pay: though ours, which had been ſtill higher, had gone off ſmoothly, and without the leaſt remark.

My Maſter having concluded this affair ſo happily, proceeded next on the great cauſe of his coming to town, in which, with our aſſiſtance, he laboured ſo ſucceſsfully, that the captain's *miſtake* met only a gentle reprimand.

I here came into the poſſeſſion of a new maſter, and immediately after changed my *Spaniſh* appearance for the faſhion of the country, and in the ſhape of a *guinea*, entered into the moſt extenſive ſtate of ſublunary influence, becoming the price of every name, that is reſpected under heaven.

CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAL *explains ſome farther properties of his nature. He changes his appearance for the mode of the country; and enters into the ſervice of a noble lord. The ſagacity of Mr.* Poundage, *and his addreſs in buſineſs.*

I AM now entering upon a ſtage, where the ſcenes are ſo various, and ſo quickly changed, that it will require your ſtricteſt attention to keep pace with my relation. But to make this the eaſier to you, and to diſincumber your ſurprize from doubts, at my repeating the paſt lives of perſons, in whoſe poſſeſſion I have been but a few moments, I muſt premiſe to you, that *our* know-

Digitized by Google

knowledge is very different from that of men. I have told you, that we know all things *intuitively*, without the trouble, delay, and errors of *diſcourſe* or reaſoning. I muſt now further inform you, that this intuition extends not only to the preſent face of things, but alſo has a retroſpect to the whole ſeries of their exiſtence, from its firſt beginning: the *concatenation* between cauſe and effect being ſo plain to our eyes, that let us but ſee any one event of the life of a man, and we immediately know every particular that preceded it.

As to *futurity* indeed, it is not yet determined how far forward we can look into that; ſome allowing us to have the ſame power of *foreſight* as we have of *retroſpect*; which was the opinion that ſupported the credit of oracles in former days. But that notion is now exploded, and men argue that our *foreſight* extends only to *natural* cauſes and effects: but in the actions of man, his *free-will* ſo often breaks that order, that it is impoſſible for us to know this moment how he will act the next, from any obſervation of the paſt; and they think they prove their argument by this, that if ſpirits could fore-know all a man's actions, it would ſpare them the trouble of tempting him to any particular one.—But this by the bye! for as I ſhall confine my narrative to matters already paſt, without ever foretelling any thing, it is not neceſſary for me to determine a queſtion, that opens ſuch a field for the gueſſes of the learned. —But to return to my ſtory.

From the *Mint*, where I put on the ſhape of a guinea, I was ſent to the *Bank*, where the pleaſure I had felt at the beauty and convenience of my new figure was conſiderably cooled, at my being thrown

Digitized by Google

thrown into so large a heap, as took away all my particular consequence, and seemed to threaten a long state of inactivity, before it might come to my turn to be brought into action. But I soon found myself agreeably mistaken, and that the *circulation* there was too quick to admit of such delay: for I was that very day paid out to a noble lord, in his pension from the ministry.

It was about two in the afternoon, when I was brought to his lordship's levee, where the grandeur of his looks, and the magnificence of every thing about him, made me so pleased with my situation, that I thought I could be satisfied to fix my abode with him for some time.

He was just arisen, and seated at the fire, leaning on a writing table covered with green velvet, on which lay some books open, and several letters which he had just broke the seals of, and was beginning to read, while a female servant, beautiful as *Hebe*, poured out his tea at a side-board, and a page, like *Ganymede*, handed it to him.

In this easy indifference he sat, casting an eye upon a book, or reading a paragraph in a letter, between every sip of his breakfast, when I was laid upon his table, by his steward, with these words,——'Two hundred, my lord.'—'Two 'hundred, (replied his lordship) the order was 'for five hundred!'--'But, my lord, the butcher, 'the baker!——*What are those wretches to me? 'Is not my whole estate sufficient for them?*' My 'lord, there is not a shilling to be got from your 'tenants, the times are so bad, and the taxes so 'high! and an ounce of provisions could not 'be had.'——'*Then you might have all fasted! I 'must have money for this evening; I am engaged in 'a* PARTY, *and cannot be off.*'——'My lord, 'your

'your lordſhip's taylor deſired me to ſpeak to 'you; he is to appear before his commiſſioners 'to-morrow, and begs'——'*What can I do, I 'would relieve him if I could, but I have no money 'for myſelf: I cannot, will not do without five hun-'dred more this evening, get it where or how you 'will.*'——'My lord, I was thinking to apply 'to Mr. *Diſcount*, the ſcrivener, but he ſaid the 'laſt time, that he would lend no more on that 'eſtate, without the immediate power of cutting 'the timber.'——'*Well, damn him, let him have 'it, tho' it will not be fit to cut theſe ten years; and, 'do you hear, get me a thouſand to-day.*——'A 'thouſand, my lord! you ſaid five hundred: I 'am afraid he will think a thouſand too much!' '*Then he ſhall never have it; let me do as I will; 'do not I know that the timber is worth twice as 'much this moment, if I could wait to ſet it to ſale? 'I will not be impoſed on by the raſcal: I'll go myſelf 'to my neighbour* Worthland *directly; he is a man 'of honour, and will be above taking advantage; 'though I did oppoſe his election*'——'As your 'lordſhip pleaſes for that. But then, perhaps, 'Mr. *Diſcount* will call in all his money, if he 'ſaw you put yourſelf into other hands; beſide, I 'am not certain that he will refuſe, and there-'fore I ſhould think it better to try him firſt; 'you may do this after. Though I muſt take 'the liberty to ſay, I ſhould be ſorry to ſee your 'lordſhip ſtoop to Sir *John Worthland*, after 'all the expence you have been at to give him 'trouble. For to be ſure he would boaſt of it in 'the country, if it were only to make you look 'little, and prevent your oppoſing him again.'— '*Why there may be ſomething in that: and there-'fore ſee what is to be done with* DISCOUNT;

'*but*

Digitized by Google

'*but I must have the thousand at any rate, five hundred of which give to poor* Buckram, *and bring me the other as soon as possible, for I am in haste out.*'—'Then your lordship had better sign this deed first, to save the time of coming back again, if he should do it.'——'*Aye, let me see it; there: and make haste.*——(And then turning to his page) *Reach me that paper, this pen is so good it tempts me to write a letter, while I wait for* Poundage's *return.*' And so humming a new tune, he went on with breakfast without the least concern.

You are so great a stranger to the ways of that part of the world which deals in money-matters, that you will be surprized when I tell you, that, while this Mr. *Poundage* brought me from the Bank, he had called upon Mr. *Discount*, and brought him to his lord's to do *his* business.

But you must not imagine this was to lend his lordship money. Nothing less. It was only to appear as the nominal lender of his lordship's own money, which *Poundage* had that very morning received from some of his tenants in the country, and which, if he could not bring it in better, he meant to replace with part of the price of the timber, which he was to buy in *Discount*'s name, who was a creature of his own.

So remarkable a transaction gave me a curiosity to take a *view* of *Poundage*'s *life*, the main lines of which I will just touch over, while you may think him gone for the money, and his lordship dressing for his engagement.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XIV.

The history of Mr. Thomas Poundage. *His lordship goes to his appointment. An evening's entertainment in high life.* CHRYSAL *changes his service: his reflections on the ruling passion of the times.*

MR. *Thomas Poundage* was the offspring of a gypsy, who had left him in the straw he was born on, in an old barn near his lordship's father's, his weakness and deformity making her not think him worth the trouble of carrying away.

The old lord himself happening to be the first who heard his cries, as he was riding by, took compassion on the little helpless wretch, and ordered him to be taken care of at his own expence, and not sent to the parish.

Such an uncommon instance of charity was immediately attributed to a tenderer motive: a suspicion, however injurious to his lordship, so advantageous to the *foundling*, that it doubled the care and attendance on him, and made him appear of such consequence, that Mr. *Thomas Poundage* himself, his lordship's steward, condescended to stand god-father for him, and gave him his own name. As *Master Tommy* grew up, he shewed all the sharpness and cunning of his race, which old *Poundage* representing to his lord, as a capacity for learning, he was put to the best schools; and being of the same age with his

Digitized by Google

his lordſhip's eldeſt ſon, his preſent maſter, was ſettled as an humble companion and attendant upon him; in which ſtation, the pliancy of his temper ſoon gained him his maſter's favour, as his ſecrecy and diſcretion did his confidence; no ſervice appearing too difficult or mean for his undertaking, to pleaſe his maſter, eſpecially in the myſteries of intrigue; nor a look ever betraying his ſucceſs.

Theſe ſervices naturally produced an intimacy, that opened to him all his maſter's ſecrets, and gave him ſuch conſequence with him, that, upon the death of his father, old *Poundage* was *ſuperannuated upon a penſion*, and the place given to him, in which he had behaved himſelf ſo judiciouſly, that, in about ten years, he had amaſſed ſo large a fortune, as to be able to ſupply his maſter's wants (with the aſſiſtance of his own money ſometimes) without the ſcandal of expoſing them to any other: a ſervice that amply recompenſed, to his lordſhip's honour, whatever prejudice it may be ſuppoſed to do his affairs.

'Tis true, his ſupplanting his godfather and benefactor *old Poundage* had not met with the approbation of ſuch as were not well acquainted with the world, and particularly, as the old gentleman in his rage, had accounted for all his kindneſs to him, by owning a relation, which he had before ſtrove to fix upon his lord, by many plain inſinuations, though he now ſaid he had long before revealed to his ungrateful ſon the ſecret of his birth.

However, if he had communicated his ſecret, our ſon of fortune had kept it ſo well, that he could now deny it with ſafety; nor had he profited ſo little by his father's example, as to be

Digitized by Google

moved with a ſuggeſtion that evidently appeared, however true it might be in itſelf, to ſpring at that time from reſentment. And as he could not expect to reap any great advantage from being acknowledged for the ſpurious ſon of one who had many legitimate children to inherit his fortune, he thought it better to confirm the former opinion, by his ſlights of the claim of *Poundage*, and, ſince he muſt be the baſtard of one of them, chuſe the lord before his ſervant.

But to return to my maſter. He was dreſſed by that time *Poundage* came back with the money, when taking the five hundred *for his own uſe*, he went to his appointment.

As to the other five hundred, which he had ordered to be paid to his taylor, for fear of the wretch's applying to the lord himſelf, in his deſpair, *Poundage* did ſend for him, and, *in compaſſion to his diſtreſſes, advanced him* 400l. of his own money, *for he had not a ſhilling of his lord's in his hands; for which piece of ſervice he deſired no other conſideration, than a receipt for* 500l. *though it might be ſo long before he could get it back, that he expected to be a looſer by his friendſhip, which* Mr. Buckram *need not, as he could bring it up in his next bill.* ———Of this I came to the knowledge ſome time after, in the courſe of my circulation.

It was five o'clock, and dinner juſt ſerving up, when my lord joined his company. At dinner, and during the reign of the bottle for a couple of hours after, the converſation turned upon all the polite topics of the times, wherein there could be no long diſputes, as every difference in opinion was immediately determined by a *bet*, the ſupreme deciſion of peace, war, religion, and law.—But this diſſipated *pidling* ſoon gave way

to

Digitized by Google

to the ſerious buſineſs of the evening, to which they all adjourned, with an intention and anxiety worthy of the conſequence at ſtake.

It is impoſſible to give you any idea of this ſcene, in which every moment produced ſuch ſudden tranſitions from deſpair to exultation, from ſhouts of joy to the moſt blaſphemous execrations of their very being, on the viciſſitudes in the momentary fortunes of the actors, that the very recollection of it is a pain even to me.

However, it made no ſuch impreſſion upon them: but they continued at it till about ſix in the *morning*, when they retired for the *night*.

In the courſe of the *evening*, I often went the circuit of the whole company round, and at length was carried home by a new maſter. But, before I ſay any thing of him, I muſt give you a few ſlight ſketches of the characters of ſome others of the company, and particularly of my late lord, in whoſe whole appearance and behaviour there was ſomething ſo extraordinary.

There is ſcarce a ſtronger inſtance of the tyranny of avarice over the heart of man, than the paſſion for *play*, which now is ſo general and prevalent, as to ſeem in a manner to have drowned every other. The tendereſt, the ſtrongeſt connections of friendſhip and nature, yield to the force of this reſiſtleſs infatuation. The perſons who eſteem each other moſt in the world this moment, no ſooner ſitting down to this *deciſion of fate*, than they labour for each other's ruin, with all the aſſiduity and eagerneſs of the moſt inveterate hatred and revenge.

Nor is this practice confined to thoſe alone whom neceſſity may ſeem to ſtimulate to ſo deſperate a reſource; the richeſt are often the moſt

Digitized by Google

infatuated with this paſſion, who, poſſeſſing already more than they can enjoy, hazard that, and give themſelves up a prey to anxiety, and often to deſpair, to indulge a fruitleſs deſire for more.

Of this laſt claſs were moſt of the company, among whom my *late* lord had ſpent this evening: ſome few indeed there were whom this folly had reduced to the former, and neceſſitated to live by their experience in the art which had been their ruin.

CHAP. XV.

The company repreſented in perſpective. Set a beggar on horſeback, and he'll ride to the devil. A new way of parrying a dun, and paying debts of honour. A commiſſion-broker flung. A connoiſſeur deceived by his own judgment and eminent taſte for VIRTU. *Hiſtory of a noble breeches-maker.*

I See your curioſity riſe at the mention of ſo ſtrange a ſcene as this muſt be. It is natural, and therefore ſhall be indulged. But, as all deſcription muſt fall ſhort of it, I ſhall repreſent it to you in perſpective. Do you therefore reſolve ſenſe into imagination, *a practice not uncommon with the philoſophic mind*, and to pure abſtracted attention ſhall my words become things, and appear as viſible to your eyes, as if they were purged with *euphraſy* and *rue*.

Obſerve now, at the head of the table, that heavy looking figure, whoſe ſaturnine complexion gives a ſolemnity to his appearance, even beyond his

Digitized by Google

his declining years. This man wore out the prime of his life in indigence and hardſhips, till chance, by one ſucceſsful ſtroke in his buſineſs, gave him ſuch a fortune, as was deemed ſufficient merit to deſerve nobility, and entitle him to one of the firſt employments in the ſtate.

Sudden elevation makes a weak head giddy; the plain, good-natured, chearful man, is loſt in the ſolemn proud peer; who is harder of acceſs than his ſovereign, and ſeems to value himſelf on having all the hours, he has ſpent in cringing to the great, repaid tenfold in attendance upon him. As to the buſineſs of his office, the whole ſyſtem of human politics is in general ſuch a jumble of blundering and villainy, that I can ſeldom bring myſelf to beſtow a moment's notice on it, ſo can ſay no more of his, than that the little attention, and leſs capacity he has for it, may moſt probably give juſt occaſion for all the murmurings that are againſt him.—But this was not the motive of my pointing him to you. It was his infatuation to the love of play, which makes him hazard that wealth which he ſo long felt the want of, in hopes of acquiring more, though he has already more than he can enjoy.

This has been an unſucceſsful night with him. Obſerve how ſtupified he looks at his loſs! extend the view but a few moments farther, and ſee how he ſits down in the common hall of the tavern, among ſervants and chairmen, inſenſible of the impropriety of ſuch a place, and unable to order his ſervants to carry him home: nor is it improbable that the ſcene he has juſt quitted may remain ſo ſtrongly on his imagination to-morrow, that

Digitized by Google

that he may write down the rules of the game he has been playing at, inſtead of the orders of his office, as he has done once before.

Next to him, you ſee a ſhort, ruddy, chearful looking man. That is one of the deplorable inſtances of the evil of this prepoſterous paſſion. With every advantage of rank, abilities, and fortune, did that perſon ſet out in life. But, alas! ſoon was the proſpect of his future happineſs and grandeur overcaſt! ſoon did gaming reduce him not only to a neceſſity of proſtituting his abilities to the prejudice of his country, but alſo of deſcending to every iniquitous myſtery of the art to ſupport his practice of it; for ſo bewitched is he to it, that he cannot reſiſt, though he now can ſcarce get any perſon to play with him, his want of money and his ſkill in the whole art are ſo well known.

This has been a ſucceſsful evening with him, as you may ſee by his extraordinary flow of ſpirits: not that his natural vivacity ever fails him in the worſt reverſe of fortune. He has won a conſiderable part of the great loſings of the perſon we have juſt been taking notice of; and though he has many demands upon him for every ſhilling of it, yet, far from thinking of paying one of them, he is this moment planning new ſcenes of pleaſure to conſume it all, chuſing to let his creditors all be bankrupts, or even to compound with them as a bankrupt himſelf, rather than deny his appetites their full gratification.

It is impoſſible to convey a juſt notion of ſuch a complicated character, by any deſcription; I ſhall therefore juſt mention one or two of his actions,

Digitized by Google

actions, from which you may, in ſome meaſure, form a judgment of the whole.

Having a preſſing occaſion, ſome time ago, for an hundred guineas, he applied to one of thoſe neceſſary attendants of the Great, who, at the moderate intereſt of five hundred *per cent.* are always ready to ſupply them with money to diſcharge their debts of honour. This friendly gentleman, being well acquainted with the character of the borrower, made many ſcruples to comply with his requeſt, till at length he ſuffered himſelf to be prevailed upon conditionally, that, if the principal and premium were not paid in a week, he ſhould receive a guinea as a further gratuity then and every time after, that he ſhould demand his money, till it was paid. Accordingly, at the end of the week he made his demand, and, as he expected, received his guinea, from which time he took care to call upon him every ſecond or third day, till he had received his money more than twice told, thus in ſingle guineas, for forbearance; always timing his applications, when he ſaw his debtor engaged in company with perſons, before whom he would not even enter into an expoſtulation, for fear of having the affair known, ſo that as ſoon as he ſaw him approach, without waiting to be aſked, he uſed to pull out his purſe, and calling him to him, gave him a guinea, to go and buy ſomething for him; an errand the other ſufficiently underſtood.

The conſtant repetition of this could not always eſcape obſervation, nor was the cauſe of it unſuſpected by moſt of his acquaintance; ſome of whom happening to hint it to him one evening, when wine had taken away all reſerve, he,

Digitized by Google

who was above being ashamed of any thing, honestly owned the whole transaction, and joined in the general laugh at his own folly: however, as the secret was now out, he resolved so submit to the imposition no longer; and the next time his friend came to wait upon him, instead of hurrying him away, as before, he publicly entered into a discussion of his demand, and as he could not attempt to deny his having received more than double what he had lent, the debt was adjudged by the company to be sufficiently discharged, and he was literally sent off, without his errand.

This story shews only the levity and inconsiderateness of his temper, and the distresses, in which they entangle him: but the following is of a blacker hue, and will prove, that he is capable of doing any thing to extricate himself from those distresses, and provide for the gratification of his passions.

Not very long ago, a young gentleman, who had a military turn, collected the whole of his small fortune, to purchase himself a commission in the army. Having lodged his money in the hands of his *agent*, who, for the convenience of making use of it, and to enhance the price of his own trouble, was in no haste to dispatch the affair, he made an excursion to the country town, in which this gentleman's seat was, and where he happened to be at that time.

As the hospitality of his temper made his house open to every stranger, who had the appearance of a gentleman, the young soldier soon became acquainted with him, and in return for the friendship for which he mistook the general affability of his conversation, and to display his

own

own importance, told him his preſent ſituation, and the method he had taken to procure ſucceſs to his hopes of a truncheon. His friend expreſſed the ſtrongeſt approbation of his ſpirit, and encouraged his hopes, but told him that he had choſen the worſt way of entering into the army, as the ſum of money, which he had given the agent, to purchaſe him only a pair of colours, applied properly to ſome of the perſons in office, and backed by good intereſt, would not only procure him a cornetcy of horſe, at preſent, which was of three times that value, but would alſo eſtabliſh ſuch an intereſt for him, as ſhould greatly accelerate his riſe to ſtill higher promotions. Struck with ſuch a promiſing proſpect as this ſpeech opened to him, the young gentleman anſwered, that he was ſenſible of the truth of what the other ſaid, but that it was his unhappineſs to have had no friend to direct him how to apply his money properly, much leſs to back him afterward. 'That's very hard (replied his friend) 'I wiſh I had known you ſooner.'—This hint was enough; the young gentleman, fired with ſuch flattering hopes, flew directly to town, and, finding that his agent had not yet concluded the purchaſe for him, took his money out of his hands, and returning to the country, in the confidence of his heart, went and preſented it to his friend, throwing himſelf entirely upon his patronage and protection.

It is probable, that, when this gentleman began the diſcourſe which gave occaſion to this action, he meant no more by it, than to diſplay his own judgment and intereſt, without any farther deſign; but the ſight of five hundred pounds was a temptation he could not reſiſt. He therefore,

Digitized by Google

fore, with ſeeming ſurprize and reluctance, received the money, and took the young gentleman into his care.

For ſome time he fed him with hopes of immediate ſucceſs; but, his impatience beginning to grow troubleſome, upon his return to town, for the winter, he gave him to underſtand 'that 'he was offended at his importunity:——that, 'ſince he had undertaken to ſerve him, he 'would do it as ſoon as he could;——but that 'he need not give himſelf the trouble of calling 'upon him any more, as he would receive ſuffi-'cient notice of his ſucceſs in the public papers.' ——Saying which words, he left him. Thunder-ſtruck at this ſpeech, the young gentleman withdrew, and, meeting one of his acquaintance, informed him of what had happened. This perſon, who was perfectly acquainted with the gentleman's character, ſaw immediately into the whole affair, and explained the impoſition to him. This made him mad; he returned directly to demand his money, but was denied admittance, nor would his letters even be received by the porter. His caſe was now deſperate; while he had paid attendance upon his patron, he had exhauſted his means of ſubſiſtence to the laſt mite, ſo that he now was in want of a morſel of bread. In this ſituation a moment was not to be loſt; and luckily, his deſpair ſuggeſted to him the only means that could poſſibly have procured him redreſs. He drew up a ſtate of his caſe in a very few words, and, putting on the beſt ſuit of cloaths he had left, went the very next day to court, where, in ſight of his patron, he bent his knee to his ſovereign, and preſented it to him. Something particular in his air and manner

Digitized by Google

manner ſtruck the monarch's notice; he read the petition; and then reached it to this gentleman, in whoſe altered countenance he ſoon read the truth of the contents: turning therefore from him, with a look of ineffable reproof and contempt, he ordered the ſecretary at war to make out a commiſſion for the young gentleman that very day, and from that hour has never held the other in the leaſt degree of eſteem, or favour; but he is inſenſible to ſuch diſgrace, and while he can gratify his paſſions, in the manner you ſee at preſent, cares not what the world thinks or ſays of him.

Oppoſite to him, on the other ſide of the table, obſerve an uncommonly large-boned bulky man: this is one of the inſtances of the inſufficiency and weakneſs of human laws, which ſtriving to remedy one evil, often make way for a greater.—That man is now advanced to the foremoſt rank of the militia liſt, merely by *ſeniority!* A grievous abuſe of that inſtitution, which to prevent favour from advancing its minions over friendleſs merit, ordains, that no ſenior officer ſhall ſerve under his junior; but now, by the natural force of human perverſion, this well deſigned regulation is made a pretext for giving command to ſuch as have no other claim to it, than (what ſhould indeed incapacitate them) old age, and ſo keeping back the advance, and damping the ardour of youth.

As there is no man without ſome particular ambition, his has taken a turn, which perhaps you may think the moſt remote from his profeſſion of a ſoldier. Pictures! painting is the ſole object of his admiration, the only knowledge he values himſelf upon. Tell him of a ſiege, or a battle,

Digitized by Google

battle, an attack or a retreat, conducted with the greateſt ſkill, and he hears you unmoved, nor will interrupt your account with a ſingle queſtion: but name *Rembrandt* or *Titian*, and he immediately gives you a diſſertation on their excellencies, and the difference of their ſchools! Tell him but of a ſale of pictures, on the day fixed for a review, and, if he is forced to feign ſickneſs to excuſe his attendance in the field, he will be at it.

Such abſurd paſſions are always the objects of artifice and impoſition. An ingenious painter of this country, not very long ſince, whoſe works would have been a credit to the beſt of foreign ſchools, but were deſpiſed at home, bethought himſelf of a way to turn this perſon's foible to ſome advantage. He made ſome deſigns, landſcapes, and other drawings, in the manner of ſome of the greateſt of the ancient *Italian* maſters, whoſe names he marked upon the backs of them, in the characters of their times, and giving them *the caſt* of age, made them up in an *Italian* cheſt, and by the aſſiſtance of a captain of a ſhip, had them entered at the Cuſtom-houſe, as directly from *Italy*, and conſigned to a ſtranger, as from a friend there, to be diſpoſed of in *London*.

The report inſtantly reached this lover of *virtu*, who was ſo raviſhed with the thought of gaining ſuch a treaſure, that he flew to the place, and, *being convinced by his judgment of the authenticity of them*, bought them all together, for a very large ſum, but far ſhort of their *real* value, had they been to be diſpoſed of by a perſon *acquainted* with it.

Though this ſucceſs was very pleaſing, and uſeful to the painter, he did not ſtop here. This perſon

Digitized by Google

perſon had ſome way taken a diſlike to him, which he indulged by running down his work. This therefore was an opportunity for revenge not to be miſſed. He let him boaſt of his acquiſition in all companies, and diſplay his judgment in proving them to be the genuine productions of thoſe great maſters, by criticiſms which none but a connoiſſeur could make: but then, as ſoon as the whole affair was ſo public, that there was no denying it, what does the incenſed artiſt but produce the counterparts of them all, which he had kept for the occaſion, ſo like as not poſſibly to be known aſunder, and unravelled the whole affair, taking care only to keep himſelf clear of the law, by ſaying, that he had ſold thoſe things as of no value, at a very ſmall price, to a *Jew!*

This was a ſevere ſtroke! It overturned the only reputation which he had even an ambition of, and robbed him of a large ſum of money beſide; to recover which loſs and divert the chagrin of the whole deceit, he has recourſe to play, which he follows with the eagerneſs you ſee.

But his is not the only abſurd paſſion that ſtrikes the notice of an accurate obſerver of mankind. The perſon on his right-hand was born in the firſt rank of the ſtate, but by ſome unlucky miſtake, the qualifications which fell to his ſhare belonged to one of the loweſt claſſes of mechanics. While others of his rank are marſhalling armies, and planning conqueſt, correcting the abuſes, or ſtudying to riſe upon the ruins of the ſtate, his utmoſt ambition is to cut out a buckſkin to advantage, and be reckoned the beſt breeches-maker of his time. Harmleſs as ſuch

an

an humble turn may ſeem, it involves the noble artiſt in many whimſical diſtreſſes.

His paſſion for breeches-making is ſo ſtrong, that he never ſits near any perſon, but his hand is immediately and unpremeditatedly, applied to his thigh, which he has no ſooner ſtroked down two or three times, than he thinks he conceives the ſize and ſhape of it ſo exactly, that he can completely fit it, without the trouble of taking any other meaſure; and accordingly never fails to introduce a diſſertation on the art, which he concludes with the demonſtrative proof of his ſkill, of offering to make a preſent of a pair of his own making. The advantage of ſuch an offer, and the pleaſure of encouraging ſo illuſtrious a mechanick, make his preſent always accepted, ſo that he has generally the moſt buſineſs of any one of the trade, though ſome accidents have happened, that have almoſt made him afraid to purſue ſuch an indiſcriminate method of ſoliciting cuſtom.

Happening ſome time ago, in a very large company, to ſit near a young gentleman, whoſe delicate complexion had brought him, though moſt unjuſtly, under a ſuſpicion of indulging unnatural paſſions, he applied his hand to the gentleman's thigh, and began to feel it all over, to take meaſure of it, according to his cuſtom. The gentleman, who was not ignorant of the imputation he lay under, and therefore was more quickly ſenſible of every thing that might poſſibly ſeem to allude to it, thought this application to his thigh was meant either to tempt, or inſult him, for he had been informed that thoſe wretches often make their infamous addreſſes in this manner, and was enraged at it to ſuch a degree,

degree, that, forgetting all reſpect to the company preſent, and to the rank of his ſuppoſed lover, he felled the poor breeches-maker to the ground, and, ſtarting from his chair, drew his ſword, and would have run him through the body, had not his arm been happily ſeized by the gentleman who ſat next him.

It is not eaſy to deſcribe the aſtoniſhment of the company at ſuch an outrage, which they could attribute to nothing but phrenzy; but the gentleman ſoon undeceived them. 'Infamous, 'unnatural wretch! (exclaimed he, as ſoon as 'rage permitted him utterance) I'll make you 'know, that I am not an object for your brutal 'paſſions. I have expoſed you here; but your 'infamy ſhall not be confined to this company; 'I'll publiſh it to all the world. Unhand me, 'gentlemen, and let me waſh off the diſgrace 'of ſuch an attempt with the monſter's blood! 'I'll gladly pay my own life as a forfeit to the 'defect of the law, that has provided no puniſh-'ment for ſuch odious crimes.'—To the greater part of the company this ſpeech was quite unintelligible, and only confirmed the ſuſpicion of his madneſs; but one of them, who had obſerved the gentleman change countenance upon the noble mechanic's applying his hand to his thigh, ſoon cleared up the myſtery. 'I be-'lieve, Sir (ſaid he) you have been too haſty, 'and miſtaken an intention, not only harmleſs 'in itſelf, but generous alſo, for one of a very 'different nature! Have you any other reaſon 'for accuſing his lordſhip of unnatural deſigns 'upon you, beſide his laying his hand upon 'your thigh, and feeling it?—'No, Sir, but 'that I think enough; too much for him to

'offer,

'offer, or for me to bear; nor will I bear it.'—'I do not pretend, Sir, to tell you what you 'muſt bear, but this I can tell you, that you 'have entirely, and moſt injuriouſly, miſtaken 'his lordſhip, who meant no more by that 'action which gave you ſuch offence, than juſt 'to take your meaſure for a pair of breeches, 'which, if you had not been ſo haſty in your 'reſentment, he would have made you a preſent 'of.'—'Death, Sir, do you make a jeſt of me.' —His lordſhip, who had heard their diſcourſe, and was by this time ſo far recovered of his fright as to be able to ſpeak, interpoſed here, or the affair might probably have taken another turn. 'No, indeed, Sir (ſaid he) he does not jeſt! I 'meant nothing more: and all the company 'preſent knows, that I never had any paſſion 'in my life, but for breeches-making; and, if 'you apprehended any thing elſe, you were very 'much miſtaken.'—

This ſpeech, and the manner in which it was delivered, were not to be reſiſted. They diſarmed the gentleman's rage inſtantly, and his only concern was how to make up the matter, ſo as to avoid the ridicule of ſuch a miſtake. He therefore told his lordſhip, that he was very ſorry for his error, and hoped that he would attribute the conſequences of it to that delicate ſenſibility, which every man of honour muſt have under ſuch an apprehenſion. This was ſufficient: his lordſhip, inſtead of harbouring reſentment, was glad to get ſo eaſily rid of the affair; and to convince the gentleman, both of the ſincerity of his reconciliation, and that he had no other deſign, than what he ſaid, in the action that gave him the offence, he undertook

to

Digitized by Google

to make him a pair of buckſkin breeches, only from the meaſure he had taken, that ſhould fit him better than any he had ever worn in his life.

CHAP. XVI.

The character of a VIRTUOSO. *The hiſtory of an* HORNED COCK; *with ſome curious philoſophical remarks on cornuted animals.*

OPPOSITE to him ſits one of thoſe philoſophers who build their pretences to ſcientific fame, on making collections of the anomalous *frolics* of nature, without ever attempting to inveſtigate the wiſdom and power diſplayed in the regular proceſs of her works. In the courſe of this ſtudy, a whimſical adventure lately happened to the noble *Virtuoſo* before us. A man that bought poultry round the country, to ſupply the markets of this great city, having got intelligence of his lordſhip's taſte, reſolved to turn it to his own advantage. He accordingly procured a moſt beautiful game cock, and ſawing off the ſpurs of another cock that had very long ones, contrived to fix them firmly with wax on the head of this bird, on each ſide of the comb, with the points turned backwards, and inclining from each other, like the horns of a goat, in ſuch a manner, that they appeared to have grown naturally there.

As ſoon as he found that he could bring his ſcheme to a probability of ſucceſs, he waited on the *Virtuoſo*, and giving notice, that he had ſomething

thing curious to communicate, was immediately admitted to an audience, in his *muſæum*, where he informed him, that he had received intelligence, from a particular friend of his, a *Scotch* pedlar, that, in the fartheſt part of the Highlands, there was a moſt remarkable cock, with two ſurprizing horns growing out of the back of his head, in the poſſeſſion of an old woman, who was famous for the *ſecond ſight*; that upon his admiring the creature, the woman had offered to ſell it to him for a pound of tobacco and a bottle of brandy, but he was afraid to meddle with it, as all the country ſaid it was her *familiar*, though he had ſeen it himſelf ſcrape the dunghill and tread the hens, like any other cock: and that, upon hearing the news, he was come to inform his lordſhip of it, and to offer his ſervice to go all the way himſelf for the bird, and bring him up, if he would promiſe to reimburſe him the expences of his journey, and give him ſome little conſideration for his trouble; and to convince his lordſhip, that he had no deſign to impoſe upon him, he would go, at his own hazard, and deſire nothing if he did not ſucceed.

The firſt mention of ſuch a curioſity threw the *Virtuoſo* into the higheſt rapture: he embraced the fellow, conjured him not to loſe a minute, nor drop the leaſt ſyllable of the affair to any perſon living, till he brought him the cock: and, to ſecure his fidelity, pulled out his purſe, and gave him ten guineas, with a promiſe of fifty more, the moment he ſhould receive him. The man promiſed every thing he required, and went away, hugging himſelf in the ſucceſs of his ſcheme. Accordingly, he left that part of the country directly, and, taking care

Digitized by Google

care to keep beyond the reach of his lordſhip's enquiry, followed his buſineſs, as uſual, for the time that he might be thought to have ſpent in his expedition. In the mean while, the *Virtuoſo* could not conceal the pride of his heart, on the proſpect of ſo great an acquiſition; but in all his letters to his philoſophical correſpondents gave myſterious hints of ſomething immenſely fine, rare, and unnatural, and aſſumed the importance due to the poſſeſſion of ſuch a treaſure.

At length, the moment arrived that he was to compleat his happineſs. About ten o'clock at night the man alighted at his lordſhip's gate, and ſending in his name, was immediately ſhewn into the *muſæum*, where his lordſhip flew to meet him, in the utmoſt impatience. As ſoon as the man entered, all over ſpattered with dirt, and putting on every appearance of fatigue, 'Well, my good friend (ſaid the *Virtuoſo*, with 'the greateſt eagerneſs) what ſucceſs? Where is 'the dear creature? Shall I be ſo happy as to ſee 'him in my poſſeſſion?'—'My lord (anſwered 'the man) I muſt beg your pardon for a mo- 'ment, I am not able to ſpeak: I am quite 'worn out'—and then dropping upon a chair, as if he was juſt ready to faint, his lordſhip immediately rung for ſome cordial for him, which he took from the ſervant himſelf at the door, (for he would not admit any one living) and gave him with his own hand. When he was a little recovered, 'I beg your lordſhip's pardon (con- 'tinued he) but I could not hold out a moment 'longer: what with travelling all day, and 'watching all night, I am quite worn out.'— 'But where is the bird?'——'And then ſuch 'offers as I have refuſed! Well, to be ſure. I

'truſted

'trusted to your lordship's generosity, for I shall 'never have such another opportunity of making 'my fortune: for behold the thing had taken 'wind, and there was my Lord Duke's and Sir '*Thomas*'s men, and twenty more, riding for 'life, to try who should get him, but I had got 'the start of them, and was coming back, with 'the pretty creature in my bosom; but I let 'them all go on their fool's errand, and did not 'say any thing to them; for how did I know 'but they might kill me to get him away from 'me?'—Having finished his speech, which the other did not chuse to interrupt, though he listened to it with the utmost impatience, the fellow opened his horseman's coat, and with the greatest caution produced the wonderful creature, the head and neck of which had been carefully thrust into a box made on purpose, for fear the coat should rub off the horns.

His lordship's rapture at the sight is not to be described. He instantly pulled out his purse, and, paying down the promised price, took possession of him, and bid the man go and refresh himself for that night, with the best in the house, and in the morning he would consider how he might make him a return more equal to his service, by procuring him some handsome place at court. But the fellow had other designs in his head than ever to see his face more. However, he kept that to himself, and retiring with many professions of gratitude, left his house directly, and took his leave of that country for ever.

In the mean time, his lordship had notice that supper was served up; but, though he had company of the first rank in his house, he was so wrapt up in the contemplation of his new acquisition,

Digitized by Google

quiſition, that he ſent word he was taken ſuddenly ill, and could not poſſibly attend them: he then diſpatched ſeveral ſervants expreſs to his learned friends, to deſire their attendance next day to ſee the moſt aſtoniſhing and beautiful compoſition nature had ever made in the animal world, and devoted the reſt of the night to the drawing up a proper deſcription of this ſurpriſing *horned cock*, with a phyſical enquiry into the ſubſtance of his horns, and a philoſophical attempt to account for ſuch an extraordinary production. When this work of uncommon learning was finiſhed, he indulged himſelf with taking another view of his darling bird, and then put him in a beautiful cage, from which he diſlodged two *Chineſe* pheaſants, and placed him in his *muſæum* next to his favourite *horned* owl.

It was ſix in the morning before he retired to reſt; when his head was ſo full of his new acquiſition, that he lay dreaming of cows with wings, and cocks with horns, and ſuch like wonderful works of nature, till the arrival of his learned friends at noon. As ſoon as their coming was announced, he aroſe directly, and, without waiting to viſit his cock, to whom he had given a ſufficiency of proviſions before he left him, went to meet them. After ſeveral impatient enquiries into the cauſe of ſo ſudden and peremptory a ſummons, the *Virtuoſo*, in all the myſterious importance, which ſo ineſtimable an acquiſition gave him, produced his own learned labours of that morning, and, when they had ſufficiently ſtudied and examined them, introduced them to a ſight of the unparallelled ſubject: 'There, 'gentlemen (ſaid he, in conſcious exultation) 'there, my friends, behold the moſt uncommon 'unna-

'unnatural, and ineſtimable curioſity, that ever 'enriched the collection of a philoſopher. There 'behold an indiſputable proof of their error, who 'aſſert that nature has placed an immoveable 'boundary between the quadruped and winged 'creations. There behold a ſufficient encou-'ragement, to urge your indefatigable ſearch 'for monſters, and to mix the whole animal 'creation in coition, for the production of mer-'maids, griffins, centaurs, harpies, and horned 'cocks, and all that beautiful confuſion which 'yield ſuch inexpreſſible delight to an inquiſi-'tive, philoſophic mind.'——

While he was making this harangue, the company approached the gilded cage, that contained this ineſtimable prodigy, and ſtooping down to contemplate him, were ſurprized to find one of his horns fallen off, and the other moved conſiderably from the ſituation, in which it had been deſcribed to them: for, doleful to relate, the cock, which was of the right game breed, had unfortunately taken offence at the viſage of the owl his neighbour, and in his ſtruggles to come at him, through the bars of the cage, had rubbed off one, and diſplaced the other of his horns. When this deplorable misfortune was mentioned to the owner, it is impoſſible to deſcribe his aſtoniſhment and confuſion. He ſtooped haſtily to be ſatisfied of the truth of it, and beholding the irreparable ruin of his pride, gave one diſmal groan, and fell at his length on the floor, in a ſwoon.

While his ſervants, who were ſummoned upon the occaſion, were fetching him to himſelf, one of the philoſophers opened the cage, and taking out the bird, they all entered into a diſcuſſion

of

Digitized by Google

of ſo ſtrange a phænomenon. After many learned and ingenious ſolutions, one of them declared, that it had always been his opinion, in which the preſent caſe abundantly confirmed him, that all cornuted animals caſt their horns every year, like the ſtag, and that the preſent caſe was no more than that; of which he was perfectly convinced, as he could plainly feel, with his finger, the growing horn, which had thus thruſt off the old one; ſo that, my lord (ſaid he, addreſſing himſelf to the owner, who, by this time was recovered, and attending to their remarks) 'Inſtead of being vexed at ſuch an event, you 'have reaſon to rejoice, as it explains a very 'difficult point, and you will now have an opportunity of tracing the growth of this beautiful prodigy.'

The ſage ſolution adminiſtred ſome conſolation to the *Virtuoſo*, who immediately took the bird in his own hands, and feeling the lump of wax, which had faſtened on the fictitious horn, was convinced of the truth of his friend's accurate obſervation, which he himſelf farther confirmed, by taking notice, that, as no blood followed the avulſion, it was evident that the horn was of itſelf ready to fall off, without the aſſiſtance of the cock's ſtruggling (for they had caught him at that work) as the diſlocation of the other horn ſhewed that that was not in the ſame ſtate of ripeneſs, and, therefore, it had reſiſted that force. Conſciouſneſs of the ſagacity of this remark, in ſome degree, reſtored his ſpirits, and he was going to proceed, when one of the company, who had taken up and examined the fallen horn, and had not given any opinion on the matter, interrupted him dryly, and ſaid, that the hypo-

Digitized by Google

theſis was certainly very ingenious, but he believed the affair might be ſolved a readier way; for, upon examination of the ſuppoſed horn, he found it was only a cock's ſpur, which had been faſtened upon the creature's head with wax, as appeared evidently by the remains of the wax, upon the end of the ſpur in his hand; and, if they would let him pull off the other, he would undertake that the impoſture would be too plain to admit of any doubt.

The mention of this threw them all into confuſion, as they had all given their opinions poſitively, of the honour of which it deprived them, and cut ſhort many more, which they were ready to offer: they therefore ſtood looking at each other, till he ſtretched out his hand to pull off the other horn, when they all interpoſed, particularly the owner, and inſiſted that they muſt be better ſatisfied of what he had advanced, before they could permit ſo raſh an experiment. But the bird himſelf cut ſhort the diſpute; for ſome of the company happening to have ſnuff in their fingers, it got into the cock's eyes, and made him ſhake his head, with ſuch violence, that off flew the horn in his owner's face. The perſon who had made the diſcovery, immediately took it up, and ſhewed ſuch plain proof of the trick, that it could no longer be denied.

It is impoſſible to deſcribe the ſhame and vexation in every philoſophic face preſent, at this lamentable event. The abuſed purchaſer, in particular, was almoſt mad: however, after mature deliberation, it was agreed upon, for the credit of philoſophy, to bear the deceit in ſilence, rather than expoſe themſelves to the ridicule of the unlearned, by ſeeking ſatisfaction from the cheat.

Digitized by Google

cheat. As for the cock, he was immediately sacrificed to *Æsculapius*, to avert the consequences which such a disappointment might have upon the health and understanding of the company, and to remove such an evidence of their disgrace. But all their caution was in vain: the person, who first detected the deceit, could not deny his vanity the pleasure of making his sagacity known; and the fellow, finding his trick passed over thus with impunity, could not avoid boasting of it; and to this day diverts his customers with the history of the horned cock.

CHAP. XVII.

More mortification to human vanity. A reason for submitting to be pillaged by sharpers. What's got over the devil's back, is spent under his belly. Filial piety remarkably rewarded.

I See you are shocked at the inconsistency, vice, and folly of mankind; but this is owing to your recluse life, and want of acquaintance with the world? To an accurate observer, things appear in their proper colours; and, if the picture should be unpleasing, the fault is in the subject, not in the painter, who honestly represents nature as he finds her. As to those, of whom I have given you these short sketches, they are wealthy, and wealth is an excuse for all things; the nobility of their birth not yielding a greater sanction to their persons, than their money does to their vices and follies. And where these tend to the dissipation of that wealth, they only enhance

hance their welcome, in every place of polite reſort: indeed, the ſociety, in which you ſee them at preſent aſſembled, ſubſiſts entirely by theſe, as by the inſtitution of it, no perſon can be admitted, who has not wealth to diſſipate; as no perſon will deſire to be admitted, who has not a vicious avarice for the wealth of others, and folly enough to hazard his own for the acquiſition of it.

But, though folly is, in the ſtrictneſs of truth, thus eſſential to this aſſociation, there are many of the members, who, in the general meaning of the word, are intirely above the imputation of it: yet ſo prevalent is the infatuation of gaming, that they will bear the groſſeſt impertinences, and mix with the outcaſts of humanity, for its gratification, as if the dice, like death, levelled all diſtinctions.

Obſerve that perſon, who ſeems to be abſorbed in thought, in the midſt of the hurricane around him. Reaſon takes the advantage of his being for a moment diſengaged, and forces him to behold, in a proper light, a ſcene ſo contrary to THE OECONOMY OF HUMAN LIFE, as that in which he is involved; but wait till the dice-box comes round to him, and you will ſee all his philoſophy vaniſh, and his paſſion for gaming hurry him as deſtructive lengths as the moſt thoughtleſs of them all.

Every ability, every virtue that could adorn and exalt the human mind, conſpired to throw the brighteſt luſtre around his youth, and mark him as a bleſſing to ſociety. Nor did he diſappoint the general hope, but filled, with dignity and honour, the high employments to which his merits raiſed him, till this pernicious paſſion inſenſibly

Digitized by Google

inſenſibly unbent his mind, and turned his thoughts from every nobler purſuit. The falling off was moſt unhappy: his time, every moment of which is precious to the public, is waſted in idle diſſipation, or devoted to pleaſures, deſtructive to his fortune, which thus falls a prey to ſharpers, while the induſtrious, honeſt tradeſman calls in vain for payment, at his door.

Yet, even in this improvidence, the natural virtue of his heart ſometimes appears, in a manner that ſoftens the ſeverity of cenſure. Some years ago, when he filled one of the moſt important places of the ſtate, in a neighbouring nation, he had notice given him, that a ſet of ſharpers, diſguiſed with the moſt delicate and ſpecious art, had entered into a combination againſt him; but inſtead of profiting by the friendly caution, and avoiding them, he ſeemed to throw himſelf, on purpoſe, into the ſnares laid for him, till they pillaged him of ſums of money, ſufficient to diſtreſs the greateſt fortune.

As it was known, that he had been forwarned of their ſchemes, his conduct was aſtoniſhing to all: but he vindicated it, by ſaying, that the wretches had put themſelves to a conſiderable expence, and travelled a great way to accompliſh their deſign; if he had diſappointed which, they muſt either have ſtarved or robbed, perhaps from thoſe who might not be able to bear the loſs, and then have been hanged: ſo that he looked upon it as charity, in a double ſenſe, to ſubmit to be cheated by them, and in the ſame manner does he ſtill vindicate his gaming, with perſons ſo notorious for their villainies, that it is almoſt infamous to ſpeak to them.

Digitized by Google

At his left hand, you see a person, with an heap of gold before him, which he dissipates with such eagerness, that he seems desirous to be poor. His father heaped up that wealth, with an avidity that was a disgrace to human nature. The groans of the distressed, the tears of the orphan and the widow, which he hoarded with his riches, now eat them like a canker; and the gold, that he wrung from the hard hands of the poor, melts in the possession of his spendthrift heir, like snow before the sun. Nor was the sordidness of his heart, in abstaining from the most necessary use of his riches, inferior to his iniquity in acquiring them. He denied himself the very necessaries of life, and literally lived in the most abject poverty, for fear of being poor. To this perverse disposition does the person you see, in a great measure, owe his inheriting his wealth; for he had an elder brother, whom the miser had always designed to be his heir, till an ill-timed act of filial piety lost him his favour.

The old man had an ailment in his leg, which, for want of proper and timely care, had grown to such a degree of malignancy, that it at length became absolutely necessary to cut it off, in order to save his life. Terrible as the apprehension of such an operation must be, the expence of it gave him still greater concern. To have it done, therefore, in the cheapest manner, he made his eldest son disguise himself in a mean dress, and take a lodging for him in a garret, in one of the obscurest corners of the town, whither he removed himself by night, and under the character of a poor tradesman, sent for a surgeon who lived in that neighbourhood, and advertised his skill at the lowest price. His son, whose near

prospect

Digitized by Google

proſpect of ſuch an immenſe inheritance did not efface his filial duty and affection, was ſhocked at ſuch an inſtance of avarice, and, though he dared not contradict, was reſolved to counteract it. Accordingly, when he was ſent for the ſurgeon, for his father had not revealed his retreat to any of his ſervants, for obvious reaſons, inſtead of going to the quack, as he was directed, he went to one of the moſt eminent ſurgeons of the age, and, revealing the whole affair to him, prevailed on him, for a large gratification, to diſguiſe himſelf, and undertake to perform the operation, for whatever trifle ſhould be offered him; and then told his father, with an appearance of joy, that, as he was going for the advertiſing ſurgeon, he had luckily met, in an alehouſe where he was directed to inquire for him, a perſon who had been many years a ſurgeon's mate on board a man of war, who he was ſure would cut off his leg, not only much better, but cheaper alſo, as his appearance ſhewed that he was ſtarving, and muſt be glad to take whatever he could get.

Such a lucky hit raiſed the old man's ſpirits, ſo that he ſubmitted to the operation without farther concern, which was performed in ſo maſterly a manner, that, in a fit of unwonted generoſity, he gave the ſurgeon half a guinea, though he had bargained with him for a crown; but then he comforted himſelf, when he began afterwards to reflect upon his extravagance, that he could ſtop it out of the fees for his attendance. In the ſame manner as he had impoſed a good ſurgeon upon him, did his unfaſhionable ſon ſupply him with all things neceſſary for his condition, by making a woman, in whom he could confide, bring them every day, as if from a lady

Digitized by Google

of fortune, a patient of the ſurgeon's, to whom he had repreſented him as an object of charity; for, if he had had no other ſupport but what he allowed himſelf, he muſt have periſhed for want of proper nouriſhment. When his cure was completed by this management, and he came to diſcharge the ſurgeon, after lamenting his inability to make a more ſuitable return, he offered him a couple of guineas; but the ſurgeon not thinking it neceſſary to carry on the deceit any longer, now the end was anſwered, told him that he need make no apology, for his ſon had already given him two hundred.—'My ſon, Sir! I do not un-
'derſtand you (anſwered the wretch, in the moſt
'violent agitations of ſurprize, confuſion, and
'rage'). 'Yes, Sir (replied the ſurgeon, addreſ-
'ſing him by his name, and telling his own)
'your ſon, to whom you are indebted for your
'life more ways than one; for, it was he that
'ſupplied you with the things which you ima-
'gined to have been ſent you out of charity.'—

Shocking as this diſcovery was, the old miſer recovered preſence of mind to carry it off in an admirable manner. 'Sir (ſaid he) I have
'a propor ſenſe of my ſon's duty, and of your
'ſkill in your profeſſion; though you have
'prevented my making an acknowledgment of
'them in the manner I intended: For you
'muſt not think that I have been deceived; I
'knew you all along: and I removed to this
'place, and took this method of concealing my-
'ſelf, both to avoid the trouble and impertи-
'nence of viſiters and complimentary meſ-
'ſages, and to make trial of my ſon's duty;
'of which I have now had a ſufficient proof.'
——Saying this, he took the ſurgeon by the hand,

Digitized by Google

hand, and accepted his offer of continuing to attend him till his wound ſhould be quite healed, with the greater readineſs, as he was paid already; but to his ſon he behaved in a different manner, for he directly made a new will, by which he bequeathed his immenſe fortune to the next brother, the perſon before us, leaving the other to pine out his days in poverty, on a poor annuity, *in reward for his obedience and duty*, (in the very words of his will) an injuſtice that was farther aggravated, by his having made him relinquiſh the moſt promiſing hopes of riſing in the army, and reſign his commiſſions, ſome time before, merely to attend upon him. Such a ſhock was almoſt too great for human fortitude: the injured gentleman ſunk under it; happy in eſcaping ſoon from a world, where the higheſt virtues are deſpiſed, if deſtitute of wealth.

As for the heir, it was his good fortune to be bred at ſuch a diſtance from his father, that he had no opportunity of making any obſervations on him, and therefore, as the miſer could not carry his wealth with him out of the world, he even left it to him; though, could he have foreſeen the ſcene before us, he would ſooner have bequeathed it to charitable uſes, to enrich overſeers, and ſtarve the poor, than given it to ſuch a ſpendthrift.

I ſee your ſenſes fail under ſuch an extraordinary exertion, I ſhall therefore cloſe this ſcene with obſerving that the whole company may be characterized under the few I have pointed to you. In this view of them, I choſe to take the ſilent moment, when their buſineſs was near over: for, in the height of it, the agitation of

Digitized by Google

such complicated passions would have been too horrible for representation.

CHAP. XVIII.

CHRYSAL gives a farther account of his late lord. The methods by which he had been initiated in the mysteries of polite life. Some sketches of the character of his next master, who gives him to an extraordinary person.

I Promised to give you some account of my *late* lord. He was the son of one of the most distinguished persons of his age, who had acquired a fortune in the service of his country, sufficient to support, with proper dignity, the nobility with which his faithful zeal was rewarded by his grateful sovereign.

The youth of his son opened with such promising hopes, that it was expected he would advance, in the steps of his father, to the highest rank of a subject. To facilitate these hopes, at his return from his travels, in which he had not only gone to see, but had also taken time to consider the principal countries of *Europe*, with those of *Africa* and *Asia*, whose interests might any way affect those of his own, or whose history, illustrated thus by observation, might teach him to improve the advantages of his own country, and avoid the evils which had been the ruin of others, he was placed in the lower house of the senate, with every advantage of fortune, interest, and

Digitized by Google

and opinion, to support the exertion of his abilities.

He had scarce made himself known here, in his proper light, when the death of his father raised him into the upper house, where he soon established a weight that made him of real consequence to the nation, and alarmed the fears of the ministry, who, as they could not confute, resolved to corrupt him, if possible; for which end the deepest schemes were put in practice, to relax his morals, and embarras his fortune, as the present situation of both raised him above their attempts.

It would require uncommon virtue to resist the temptations to vice, in an age whose refinements have taken off every grossness, and almost every horror of its appearance. His regard was won, by a most delicate application to that vanity, which is too often the shadow of merit, especially in youth; the very persons who designed to change his principles, seeming to give up theirs to the superior force of his reason.

Such artifice soon won the confidence of his unguarded heart, and inclined it to receive their opinions and advice, without farther examination: as the heat of youth and a vivid imagination assisted their designs against his fortune, the success of which was in itself a sufficient reward.

He had always expressed a dislike to *play*, nor ever gave into it, but in complaisance to company. To conquer this aversion was therefore their last labour, in which they found easier success than they could have even hoped for. The affluence of his fortune made him above appre-

Digitized by Google

apprehenſion of loſs, and a diſdain to be excelled, even in an art he diſapproved, engaged him with a keenneſs, that ſoon made his advances in the art a pleaſure to him.

The work was now done; and a few years of his own induſtry, with the aſſiſtance of his friends, and the management of his faithful ſteward, made him willing to enter into the pay of a miniſtry, which he might, in leſs time, have overturned.

This was his ſituation at that time; but ſome ſecret ſtruggles, which I ſaw reaſon and virtue making in his heart, make me think he meditates a revolt from his infatuation, which the leaſt liberty to his natural good ſenſe could not fail to accompliſh; an event, which the rapacity of *Poundage* muſt haſten, to his own ruin.

The perſon in whoſe poſſeſſion I left the ſcene you have juſt beheld, was one of thoſe who had been ſo ſucceſsful in initiating my late maſter into all the myſteries of pleaſure. Indeed, he ſeemed deſigned by nature to extend its empire over all mankind, making it the ſole object of abilities equal to the moſt exalted purſuits, to invent new, to improve the old methods of gratifying ſenſe, and enforcing his precepts, by an example ſo keen, and a converſation ſo captivating, as not to be reſiſted.

Appetites ſo extenſive required a large ſupport; to provide which, for fortune had ſo far frowned upon his birth, that he was but a younger brother, he was compelled to ſteal ſome moments from his darling pleaſures, and ſacrifice them to buſineſs.——The intereſt of his family and his own abilities had raiſed him to the firſt employments in the ſtate; but as the ſole motive of his

Digitized by Google

his submitting to the restraint of any application, was to acquire a fund for the gratification of his pleasures, his haste to arrive at that end precipitated him into the most destructive measures, and made him ready and eager to embrace every opportunity of sacrificing, or rather selling the interest of his country for present private gain.

The proper application of the gifts of Heaven makes them a blessing. This cast of his disposition made those abilities, which under a right direction, would have been of the highest service to himself and his country, a real prejudice to both, making him the ready and dangerous instrument of the most enormous crimes, that could promise present gratification to his passions.

In such a life, there must necessarily be many disagreeable occurrences, but they made no impression on him; for his whole soul is so devoted to pleasure, that upon the least miscarriage in business, he finds immediate relief in the return to that, which he can fly to, without any difficulty, the natural vivacity of his temper, that makes his conversation so bewitching to others, never yielding to a second moment's vexation at any one event.

As the viper bears in herself the antidote of her poison, this dissipation of temper prevents his abilities from doing all the mischief he otherwise might, by pulling off the mask, and shewing his designs too soon for their accomplishment. The very persons, who would gladly avail themselves of the venality, not daring to trust to the inconstancy of his disposition; so that he soon lost his greatest power of doing evil, otherwise than by opposing, and impeding the measures of those,

Digitized by Google

those, whose successful honesty disappointed his designs, and shewed the danger of them in its proper light.

You will not imagine, that my stay could be long in his possession. He that very day gave me to an author, for throwing dirt on the characters of those who had detected and defeated his schemes of leading his country into ruin.

CHAP. XIX.

The history and character of CHRYSAL's *new master. His adventures at a coffee-house. The fun of a modern* GENIUS *retorted upon himself, by the grave rebuke of a testy veteran.*

MY new master was a votary of *Apollo*, in the double capacity of physic and letters: for, the former not affording scope enough for his genius, he usually dedicated his leisure hours to the gentler entertainment of the latter, through the extensive circle of which he had occasionally ran; there not being a branch in the wide world of science which had not felt his pruning: the lowest rudiments of the most vulgar arts being, in his opinion, no more beneath the philosophic pen, than the most abstruse heights of speculation.

It must be owned, that, in such a latitude of study, he often was obliged to prostitute his labours; but for this he had the solid consolation, that his gain generally rose, in proportion as his subject sunk, the caprice of the world paying best,

Digitized by Google

beſt, that is, buying moſt eagerly, what is affected to decry moſt. Nor is this to be wondered at, a looſe tale, or a receipt for cooking a new diſh, being better adapted to general taſte, than a moral eſſay, or metaphyſical ſpeculation.

From his patron's levee, my maſter went directly home, and, undreſſing into his cap and ſlippers, aſcended to his ſtudy, and took a meditative turn or two, revolving in his mind the many grievances that called upon him for redreſs, from the ſucceſs of that morning.

At length burſting into a rapture, he cried, 'I'll think no more! Be the wants of yeſterday forgot! thoſe of to-morrow will come too ſoon, without the anticipation of thought! I cannot pay all I owe! I cannot provide all I want! Hence then, vain care! I'll depend on fortune, and myſelf, for a greater ſupply another day, and indulge my genius with the preſent.'——Big with this heroic reſolution, he gave orders for dinner, and then, ſending for his beſt ſuit home, he dreſſed himſelf in all his pride, and went to a coffee-houſe to look at the papers.

The pleaſure of *my* company had given ſuch a flow to his ſpirits, naturally high, that he ſoon drew the attention of the coffee room, the greater part of the company gathering in a circle round him, to hear his remarks on the publications of the day, which he threw out with the confidence of one, who thought his opinion the eſtabliſhed ſtandard of all writing; and at the ſame time, with a ſprightlineſs that made his very impudence and abſurdity entertaining.

While he was thus running on, in the torrent of harangue, a *veteran*, whoſe only employment,

Digitized by Google

ployment, for many years, was talking over the actions of his youth, and comparing them to the miſtakes and loſſes of the preſent times, no longer able to contain his rage, at having his audience drawn from him, in the midſt of his daily tale, roſe up with an execration that ſhook the room, and called for his cloak and cane, 'This is not to be borne (exclaimed he). 'Here, waiter, take for my coffee! I ſhall ſtay 'in ſuch a place no longer: is this the land of 'freedom, forſooth! that a man muſt be diſ-'turbed in his diſcourſe, and not have liberty 'to ſpeak where he ſpends his money? Had 'I but the command here, I'd ſettle other or-'ders; every prating puppy ſhould not preſume 'to interrupt his betters: things are like to go 'well with us, when matters of the higheſt 'conſequence can be broken in upon by noiſe 'and nonſenſe. This is freedom with a ven-'geance.'

The look and accent with which theſe words were pronounced, were too terrible for my maſter to encounter; both nature and experience having given him ſo lively an apprehenſion of danger, that his readieſt preſence of mind was not always able to conceal it. He was, therefore, cut ſhort at once, and could ſcarce maſter ſpirits to throw a wink at ſome of thoſe about him, as the *man of war* looked another way.

But the triumph was not ſo abſolute over all the company, one of whom, reſolving to have ſome *fun*, cries out, 'Pray, doctor, proceed; 'you are juſt in the moſt intereſting part of 'your ſtory: the colonel could not mean to 'interrupt you; he is too fond of telling his 'own ſtory to give another ſuch pain: go on,

'you

'you ſhould not be frighted at a flaſh in the 'pan.'

'Frighted indeed' (replied the doctor, gathering courage when he ſaw himſelf ſupported) at 'what, I wonder! at the ſight of what old age 'can ſink to; no, no! I am not ſo eaſily frighted! I leave that to your antiquated heroes, the 'exploits of whoſe youth have exhauſted their 'courage: I mean no offence;—but to go on, 'as I was ſaying, *the diſcovery of the ſleep of plants 'accounts in the cleareſt manner.*'—'Hold, doctor '(cries the other) that was not *as you were ſaying*, you were telling us of the nobleman, who 'caught his coachman in bed with his lady, one 'morning, when he came home, ſooner than 'uſual from the tavern; pray how did ſhe bring 'herſelf off?'

'Oh, was that it? (replied the doctor) faith 'I had forgot; the fury of Mars had like to 'have made a gap in the annals of *Venus:* ha! 'ha! ha! why ſhe made nothing of it, but 'laughing in his face, moſt heroically, *tit for 'tat*, my dear, is but fair play (ſaid ſhe) while 'I ſay nothing at your ſtaying out night after 'night with *Kitty*, you cannot in conſcience 'blame my comforting myſelf a little with '*John.*'

The colonel ſtood all this while convulſed with rage, too big for utterance; but the univerſal laugh, that followed the doctor's laſt words, rouſing him, he advanced to him, 'Whom do you 'dare to laugh at, *poultron?* (ſays he, taking 'him by the noſe) whoſe courage is exhauſted, 'but you are beneath my notice or reſentment, 'farther than this'—(then ſpitting full in his face, he turned to the gentleman who had ſet the doctor

Digitized by Google

doctor on, and who began now not to like the joke any farther) 'But for you, Sir! you perhaps 'may be a gentleman, and worth calling to a 'further account! will you please to walk up 'stairs with me, and let me know, what you 'mean by a flash in the pan?'

The ceremonies of attending him, on such an expedition, would not have been much more agreeable to this gentleman than to my master, but he had more command of his fear, and was well used to bring himself off with a joke. 'Sir '(says he) you need not give yourself the trou-'ble of going up stairs, for what I can as well 'do here! By bidding the doctor not be fright-'ed, I mean at the circumstances of his own 'story, for just as you interrupted him, he had 'said, the lord snapped a pistol at his lady, 'which had flashed in the pan! That was all, 'Sir! I could never mean it to offend you, or 'shew a doubt of your courage, which I have 'heard you relate so many surprising instances 'of, so often, and always so invariably alike, 'that they must be true.'

'Sir! Sir! have a care (replied the colonel) 'I do not desire to be troubled with such a 'gentleman as I perceive you are! But let me 'tell you, Sir, that I have seen a man's face 'broke before now, for wearing such a sneer! 'As to the stories I tell, I am satisfied they will 'be of no service to you, nor raise the least emu-'lation in a man who can stay lounging about 'town, when his country has occasion for him. 'I was younger than you when I went a volun-'teer with Lord *Cutts*, under the duke of *Marl-'borough*; nor was I urged by want, I had a 'good estate, Sir, sufficient to supply me with

'what

'what you call the pleaſures of life, if I could 'have thought any thing a pleaſure that was not 'attended with honour. Sir, I loſt this hand at '*Blenheim*, and this leg at *Malplaquet!* But why 'do I tell you! you will preſerve your hands 'to take ſnuff; and your legs to walk the Park, 'the proper ſcene of your campaigns.'—With which words the doughty hero marched away to his chariot.

Though this lecture was rather too grave for the taſte of the perſon to whom it was addreſſed, it gave great pleaſure to the unconcerned part of the company, and to none more than my maſter, who had wiped his face, and began to come to himſelf, as ſoon as he ſaw the danger directed another way.

Before the gentleman could ſpeak, the doctor came up to him, and ſaid, 'I am ſorry, Sir, 'that you ſhould have drawn this ſtorm upon 'yourſelf, upon my account! But I bore the 'worſt of it! You heard but the whiſtling of 'the winds, the ſhower fell on me! 'tis well 'though, that what ſuch dotards do is not 'eſteemed an affront!'——'An affront, Sir '(replied the other) I do not underſtand you! 'I hope you do not inſinuate, that there was 'any affront offered to me, or that I was in the 'leaſt concerned in what was ſaid, only to you!'—'Not at all, Sir (returned the doctor) not 'at all, Sir! the colonel's diſcourſe was all di-'rected to me, to be ſure! and I hope to profit 'by it, thus far, that I will never interrupt him 'again!'——And with theſe words he left his former friend the field, not caring to enter into any farther altercation with him, for fear he might take it into his head to vindicate his character on *him*, as *he knew his man*.

Such

Digitized by Google

Such ſlight rebuffs made not a moment's impreſſion on the temper of my maſter: he was uſed to, and made nothing of them! A good dinner, and a bottle of wine, ſent him in the evening, in a critical enthuſiaſm, to the theatre, where all action fell ſhort of the ſublimity of his conception, all expreſſion, of the warmth of his feeling, as he fully explained to every company in the coffee-houſe, while he ſat at public ſupper, after the play was done.

CHAP. XX.

Some further account of CHRYSAL's *maſter. His converſation and engagements with two bookſellers. Some of the ſecrets of the trade.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

EXTENSIVE as theſe ſcenes were, they ſhewed not my maſter in his proper light. His peculiar ſphere was his ſtudy, where the inconſiſtency of his work, ſhewed the *chaos* in the brain, from whence they ſprung. *Chaos*, did I ſay! *Chaos* is order to the confuſion there. For ſurely the diſcordant ſeeds of ſuch ill matched things were never jumbled together before. An auctioneer's library is a regular ſyſtem, in compariſon to his head. Such an heap has neither beginning nor end. No fixed point to commence a deſcription from. I ſhall therefore wave ſuch an attempt, and only ſtrive to convey ſome idea of it, from its effects.—At five the next morning he aroſe to his labours, the firſt of which was

Digitized by Google

was to consider, what he should begin the day with, such was the multitude he had in hand. But what reason could not determine, chance must, and he took them as they happened to lie, *panegyric*, *libel*, *physic*, *divinity*, *cookery*, *criticism*, *politics*, *ballads*, *botany*, &c. &c. &c. In all of which he indefatigably worked the task of the day, changing his subject with as little concern as he did his paper: and though such rambling prevented his ever getting deeper than the surface of any subject, yet it shewed the extent and volubility of his capacity, and that it wanted only regular application to any science, to be eminent in it.

As soon as he had finished, and the *devils* had carried away his labours, he was just descending to go out, when a bookseller came to pay him a visit. After much ceremony on one side, and little civility on the other, Mr. *Vellum* thus accosted my master: 'Well, Sir, I see there is 'no dependence on the word of an author! I 'thought I was to have the answer to yester-'day's pamphlet last night: Somebody else will 'do it, and then I shall be finely off.'

'Upon my honour, Sir (replied my master) 'I assure you I should have done it, but some 'business'—'*What business can you have, that 'should interfere a moment with your engagements 'with me?*'—'Dear Mr. *Vellum*, do but hear 'me! There is a noble lord going to be divorced 'for impotence; I just got a hint of the matter, 'the night before last, and so waited upon his 'lordship's gentleman yesterday morning, with 'whom I had a particular intimacy, having 'served him in my profession more than once; 'and from him I have learned the whole story,

'and

'and now leave me to ſet it out! I'll engage to 'make a noble eighteen-pennyworth of it, at 'leaſt, by to-morrow morning.' '*Why, there 'may be ſomething in that; but in the mean time 'you ſhould not let other matters cool!*'——'Ne-'ver fear, pray how did yeſterday's pamphlet 'do?'—'*Why, tolerably well; but the ſcandal was 'ſo groſs, that I was almoſt afraid.*'—'Aye! ay! 'never fear me for an home cut; never fear me!' —'*But I hear nothing of the exercitations!*'—— 'No; *I ſent* away the ſheet above an hour 'ago!'——'*Then there's that book you pro-'miſed to re-write; ſome one elſe will do it, and 'prevent you.*'—'Never fear, I have juſt laid 'down a ſcale for the ſtyle; beſides, I have 'altered the title already, and that you know is 'the principal thing.' '*That is right! Now 'you ſpeak of titles, I want half a dozen directly! 'this very day, if poſſible!*'—'It is rather too late 'now, but where are the books?'——'*In the 'lumber garret, where they have lain theſe ſeven 'years.*'——That's well; they are forgot by 'this.' '*Forgot! why they were never known! 'the author was a man of fortune, who printed them 'at his own expence, but I prevented the ſale, and ſo 'had them for the publiſhing! Ha! ha! ha! beſide 'a good conſideration for buying up at a double 'price, what I had* (NOT) *ſold of them; ſo that it 'was not a bad job; and, now he is dead, they may 'ſafely come out, under new titles!—It will be too 'great a delay to wait to ſee them, but here are the 'old titles, which I ſuppoſe may do.*'——'Why, 'aye; they may do! but I cannot poſſibly 'write them this evening; you know I muſt 'anſwer that pamphlet I wrote laſt week, be-'fore it is forgot; I have an anſwer ready,

'that

'that will make a noiſe; I expect it will raiſe 'a curioſity, that will ſell another edition of 'the pamphlet. I left openings for ſuch retorts 'upon the characters I praiſed in that, and have 'ſuch pieces of ſecret hiſtory to hit them off 'with, that I'll engage for the ſucceſs.'——— '*Aye, ſecret hiſtory, and ſtories of familiar misfor-* '*tunes, and ſuch like, may do ſomething. But I had* '*like to have forgot the main buſineſs of my coming.* '*There is an account of the death of an eminent di-* '*vine, this morning: could we not wamp up a vo-* '*lume or two of ſermons for him, think you? He* '*was ſuſpected of hereſy and atheiſm, and you know,* '*that would make any thing in his name go off.*' 'Egad, a good thought! and particularly lucky 'at this time: for, as I have been engaged in 'divinity lately, I know the weak ſides of the 'queſtion, and a little infidelity will be a re-'freſhment to me. It ſhall be done! the ſer-'mons ſhall be ready without delay! Have not 'you got ſome by you that did not go off: let 'me have one of each, and I'll interline them 'to ſave time; but will you publiſh them your-'ſelf?—I thought you had given up ſermons!' '*Myſelf! no! no! I'll ſend them in to Mr.* Vampe: '*I'll reſerve the confutation of them to myſelf!*— 'Egad, another good thought; the confutation 'will do better! and I'll take care to make it 'a ſmart one, and play the devil with the 'author; ha, ha, ha.———But, Mr. *Vellum*, 'your coming here this morning prevented my 'waiting on you: it is a great while ſince you 'promiſed to ſettle with me. You ſhould con-'ſider, Sir'——'*What pray, good Sir, ſhould I* '*conſider? that I have ſupported you!*—'Sup-'ported me, Mr. *Vellum*; Sir, I have a pro-

'feſſion

'feſſion.'——*I know you have, Mr. Doctor; a* 'profeſſion indeed, in which his *Majeſty's ſubjects* 'may bleſs God that nine in ten of you would ſtarve, 'if they had no other way of getting bread, beſide 'that'—' Mr. *Vellum*, you know this way of talk-'ing ſignifies nothing. It is a long time ſince 'we have ſettled any account, and there are a 'great many articles! Let me ſee: aye, here 'they are! and a long liſt it is! NINETEEN 'PAMPHLETS, with ANSWERS to FOURTEEN 'of them; NINE RAPES, SIX MURDERS, FIVE 'FAST and FOUR FUNERAL SERMONS, THIR-'TY-SIX ESSAYS, TWENTY-TWO TITLES, 'FOUR QUARTO VOLUMES RE-WRIT, SE-'VENTEEN WILLS, TWENTY-FOUR'———— '*Go on, Sir, go on! but when you have done, look* 'at THIS, *and then talk to me of an account; here* 'is your bond for 15*l.* which is due theſe two years; 'and it is very likely, to be ſure, that you ſhould 'leave it out-ſtanding ſo long, if you had any account 'to ſet off againſt it! but I am glad I know you; and 'ſince you talk of accounts, obſerve that I demand my 'money, due on this bond, which I will have, and, 'when you have paid that, it will be time enough for 'me to ſettle accounts with you; ſo, Sir, your ſervant.' —' Mr. *Vellum*, good Mr. *Vellum*, do not be ſo 'haſty! I did not mean to give you offence.' —'*Accounts indeed! have I not ſupplied you with* 'paper above the weekly allowance we agreed for, 'and yet you will talk to me!'——' Mr. *Vellum*, 'I may be in the wrong; let matters ſtand as 'they are: but you have not told me what ſize 'you would have this affair of the divorce, 'that I mentioned to you juſt now'——' *There* 'it is now; that is your way always; you know my 'eaſy temper, and that you can bring me down when

'you

Digitized by Google

'*you pleaſe: why, if the ſtory will bear much print-*
'*ing, and the circumſtances are very ſtrong and*
'*plain, I believe you may draw it out to two ſhil-*
'*lings; and to encourage you, and ſhew you that I*
'*mean generouſly by you, when you have finiſhed*
'that, *and the* Anſwer, *and the* Sermons, *and the*
'Confutations, *and the* Titles, *and the* Exercita-
'tions, *I will give you up your bond, and then we*
'*will begin an account on fair even terms. But I*
'*am in haſte, I have three or four other gentlemen*
'*to call upon; I ſhall depend upon your promiſe, and*
'*ſo good morning.*——' Good morning to you,
'good Mr. *Vellum*—Damned, impoſing, grind-
'ing ſcoundrel; but I'll be quit with you, for
'all your tricks (ſaid the Doctor, as ſoon as
'Mr. *Vellum* was out of the room) and teach
'ſuch ſtupid raſcals to attempt outwitting men
'of genius.'

When I conſidered the nature and importance of my maſter's demand, I could not but wonder at the eaſe with which he took a denial, and the joy he expreſſed at Mr. *Vellum*'s departure; but the myſtery was ſoon cleared up, by the arrival of Mr. *Pamphlet*, another of the trade, almoſt the very moment *Vellum* went down ſtairs, and whom, I ſaw by his reception, my maſter expected.

If I was before ſhocked at the cruelty with which I thought *Vellum* treated my maſter, I was now no leſs ſo, at the part *he* acted with *Pamphlet*, with whom he bargained over again for the very ſame *ware* which he before promiſed to *Vellum*, and flattered him with an aſſurance of having his buſineſs done, that is, the anſwers and re-writing, before *Vellum* poſſibly could, for they were mortal enemies.

Digitized by Google

The diſcourſe between theſe was much the ſame as the former, only that it was concluded in a different manner; *Pamphlet* giving my maſter a couple of pieces, to keep him in mind of his engagement.

I was utterly at a loſs to think how he meant to act between theſe two; when he put an end to my doubts by this ſoliloquy. 'So, now I 'have diſpatched you two, the day is my own; 'keep my engagements! I will, with both alike. 'Let me ſee, there is nothing in it, but a little 'trouble of writing: I can divide the hits be-'tween both anſwers, according to the opens I 'have left on purpoſe, and ſo ſend them to both 'at the ſame time; only to divide the altera-'tions in my ſcale of ſtile, and make a ſecond 'title, and ſo it is done. This method that I 'have found, of uſing a feigned name, makes 'it all eaſy. Well, let thoſe who were born to 'fortunes, ſpend them in ſloth and ignorance, 'I have an eſtate in myſelf, that can never be 'exhauſted. I am obliged to nature only, for 'my abilities, and carry the fountain of honour 'and fortune in the fluency of my genius.'

He then deſcended from his aerial citadel, and going out to *viſit* his patients, *changed* me at a coffee-houſe, where I was immediately borrowed at the bar by an officer, who was going to dine with his general, and wanted money to give his ſervants.

BOOK

Digitized by Google

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

CHRYSAL *enters into the ſervice of the gentleman of a general. Gratitude in high and low life. The modern way of riſing in the world, and the happineſs of dependance. Influence of* CHRYSAL*'s maſter, with his curious manner of ſupporting it.*

YOU may judge that my ſtay with this owner was but ſhort: he gave me directly to the general's *gentleman*, with a letter to be preſented to his excellency next morning, as he could not find courage to ſpeak to him in perſon.

The caſe of this perſon, though not uncommon among men, I own affected me. He was the ſon of an officer of diſtinguiſhed merit, the ſervices of whoſe life had, in the 80th year of it, been rewarded with the command of a regiment, and the hopes of his ſon crowned with a pair of colours; which, on the death of his father, in ſix months after his elevation, he found to be his whole inheritance; the fees of office, and the equipage for his new rank, having exhauſted

Digitized by Google

hauſted all the ſavings of the old man's ſubaltern frugality.—The moſt exemplary duty, in five warm campaigns, had advanced the ſon to the rank of a lieutenant, when the exaltation of the perſon to whom he now applied, raiſed his hopes to a company, which was vacant in the regiment, and his right by ſeniority; for ſuch was his ignorance of mankind, that he built ſanguine expectations on the very reaſons that ſhould have deprived him of any, *the obligations of the perſon to whom he applied, to his father*, who had taken him up, the poor friendleſs orphan of an enſign, educated him at his own expence, procured him his firſt commiſſion, and afterwards lent him the money with which he had purchaſed his company: a debt which the ſon was weak enough to expect a friendſhip from, though it, and much more, had long ſince been cleared at play.

But, though the character of the ſon, and the general's known intimacy with the father, in a manner obliged him to promiſe him his friendſhip, yet nothing was farther from his thoughts than ever to do him any real ſervice; as he imagined that would be acknowledging the obligations which his very attendance ſeemed to upbraid him with: a dinner now and then being the only favour he ever had, or ever meant to give him. You may, perhaps, have experienced the miſery of a dependant's dining at the table of his patron, where the tortures of *Tantalus* are aggravated by anxiety of giving offence. I ſhall therefore haſten over this, and the other ſcenes of that evening, which were but the common occurrences of military greatneſs, and ended in a deep debauch, as ſoon as all but the *choſen few* had retired, to come to the concluſion of my

Digitized by Google

my *late* master's story, in which my *present* bore a considerable part.

As soon as the general had slept off the fumes of his wine, and awoke next morning, my master's hour of influence arrived, which he never failed to improve. After a prelude of coughing and spitting, the scene opened thus: '*Who's there? William!*'—'Sir'——'*William, was not I very drunk last night! my head achs most confoundedly.*'—'Your excellency was a little cut, but you broke up much the strongest of the company.———'*Aye, I wonder at that, I spend myself with talking, when I begin to go, and that helps a man on damnably: that story of the battle, where I was taken prisoner, is a bottle in my way always.*'——'That foreign gentleman, who never speaks a word, has a great advantage then.'——'*Aye, so he has; but he is a damned honest fellow, and a very good companion; he always fills a bumper, and never speaks a word.—But my head.*'—'Perhaps your excellency had better take something.——'*No, I have taken too much already; though that's right; give me a glass of the old geneva; I am to go to council to-day, and must settle my head—Aye, that will do, I am much better now; there is nothing like a hair of the old dog.*'

This conversation continued till he was seated to breakfast, when my master turned to a new topic. 'I was very sorry (said he) that your *excellency* happened to sit in last night, as Mrs. *Motherly* was to call.'——'*Why, that's true;* William, *I did not think of one engagement when I made the other; and, when she called me out, I was not in cue; I was too far gone. We old fellows are not sparrows; the spirit is often willing,*

'*when the flesh is weak*; *ha, ha, ha.*'—'Your '*excellency* is pleased to be merry, but, to my 'thinking, the youngest fellow of the age has 'not more vigour.'——'*Aye*, William, *do you* '*think so indeed? But why do you think so, Wil-*'*liam?*'———'Because your *excellency* always 'chuses such green things: now I should think 'a ripe woman would be better; I am sure she 'would give less trouble.'———'*Ha, ha, ha,* '*why that's your taste*; *but youth is mine, and* '*while I have powers (and I do not think mine quite* '*gone yet) I will please my taste. But what had* '*Mrs.* Motherly *last night?*'—'A very fine girl 'as your *excellency* could wish to see.'—'*How* '*old?*'——'About sixteen.''——'*Psha, mellow* '*pears*; *I loath such trash.*'——'But Mrs. *Mo-*'*therly* said she could swear she was untouched. 'She came from the country but yesterday, a 'relation of her own: the poor thing knew 'nothing of the matter, and thought she came 'to be hired for a laundry maid.'—'*Why, that* '*is something, but I wish she were younger.*'—'If 'your *excellency* pleases but to wait a little, I 'have one in my eye, that will suit your taste 'exactly; a sweeter child is not in all *England.*'— '*Aye, good William* (spitting once or twice, and 'wriggling in his chair) *Aye, that is something,* '*but how old?*—'Just ten, and finely grown.' —'*Right, the right age. That's true! I'll speak* '*this very day for that place for your brother. Tell* '*him to come to-morrow: I will not be refused.*'— 'We are both obliged to your excellency for 'your favours.'—'*But when shall I see this girl?* '*Give* Motherly *some excuse with her ripe fruit.* '*Sixteen! sixty! psha!*'—'Sir, I shall go about 'it this very evening. A letter from captain

'*Standard*;

Digitized by Google

'*Standard*; will your *excellency* pleaſe to read it?' —'*Damn him and his letter: throw it into the fire! What would the unreaſonable ſcoundrel have? Did I not give him his Dinner yeſterday? Has he not been introduced to good company at my table? If he had any induſtry or ſpirit, with theſe advantages, he would have learned to play and made his fortune as others do. Since he grows troubleſome on encouragement, I'll ſtarve him into better manners. Bid the porter ſtrike him off the dinner liſt.* —'I beg your *excellency*'s pardon, for mentioning him; but the manner I have heard you talk to him made me imagine you really did deſign to provide for him; and he ſays there is a vacancy in the regiment juſt now.'——'*Damn his impudence! a vacancy indeed! I ſhall never think there is a good one till he makes it at* Tyburn.' —'I beg your *excellency's* pardon: I ſhall never mention him more. Would you have me go about the *child* this evening? It is a little angel to be ſure.'—'*This moment, if you think you can ſucceed.*'—'I ſhall try at any rate: but there is one obſtacle.——'*What is that? you know I never grudge money on theſe occaſions. How much will do?*'—'That is not the difficulty here; money will not do, and I hardly know what will.'—'*Money not do! why what the devil can it be, that money will not do?*'———'I ſcarce know how to mention it to your *excellency*, but the little cherub is niece to captain *Standard*, his ſiſter's daughter, and while he is in the way, there will be no poſſibility of getting at her.'—'*Is that all? Then he ſhall join the regiment to-morrow.*'—'But then he will leave ſuch an impreſſion of your unkindneſs upon his ſiſter, if there is nothing done for him,

Digitized by Google

'after waiting so long, that it will be impossible for any person belonging to you to gain 'access.'——'*What would you have me do? I 'never will bear to have the fellow get a company in 'my regiment: that would be acknowledging the obligations he has the impudence to say I received from 'his father; I never will bear it.*'—'I beg your '*excellency*'s pardon; I did not presume to point 'out any such thing, and indeed the possession 'of such a *baby* (though my eyes never beheld 'her fellow) is not worth your giving yourself 'so much trouble about; she is quite too young, 'though so well grown.'——'*You say she is 'but just ten! and such a beauty!*—'I wish your '*excellency* could but see her, for I am unable to 'describe her.'—'*But cannot some way be found 'out, beside fixing this fellow under my nose?*'— 'That was just what I was going to take the 'liberty of hinting to your *excellency*. There 'are several gentlemen of fortune, in the troops 'just ordered to *America*, who have no liking to 'the voyage. Now I think, with submission, 'that you would oblige some of them, with an 'exchange into your regiment, and let captain '*Standard* go in his place. And this will oblige 'him too; for I have often heard him wish to 'go there, in hopes of rising, when they come 'into action.'——'*A good thought, and so I will. 'Let the fellow go to* America *and get scalped; his 'hot head wants to be cooled: such poor wretches as 'he are just fit to be transported there. Tell him 'to prepare directly! I long to be rid of him. But 'when shall I see the dear little creature?*'—'In 'twenty-four hours after he is gone, I'll under-'take to have her eating sugar-plumbs, and 'sobbing in your bosom. It cannot possibly be 'sooner,

'sooner, for you know the captain's ſpirit, and 'that he would cut the throat of a prince, who 'ſhould diſhonour his family, as he calls it.'— '*Aye, damn his ſpirit, that is true; that is what 'has kept me civil to the fellow ſo long: I know he 'has all the romantic madneſs about honour, and 'ſuch ſtuff, that made his fool of a father live and 'die a beggar.*'

By this time his *excellency* was dreſſed to go to council, for which another dram ſettled his head.

I *ſee* your ſurprize, at the brutal behaviour of the maſter, and the infamous deſigns of the man. The former is beyond aggravation; but the latter were only an honeſt artifice in favour of his friend, who had no ſuch niece in the world.

CHAP. II.

The Hiſtory of Mr. WILLIAM. *Some odd circumſtances in his conduct accounted for. By a progreſſion equally polite and frugal,* CHRYSAL *comes from his poſſeſſion into that of a celebrated female.*

WILLIAM was a ſon of the regiment, born of one of the general wives that followed it. He was about the ſame age with *Standard*, who had taken ſuch a liking to him, when they were boys, that he ſhared his allowance with him, gave him his old cloaths, and taught him what he learned at ſchool. A natural acuteneſs of genius improved theſe advantages ſo well, that *William* could read and write enough for a gentleman; dance, fence, and ſcrape on

Digitized by Google

the violin, before his friend's power of ſerving him was put an end to, by the death of his father, and his ſpirit and appetites were too great to accept of his offer, of the beſt ſupport an enſign could ſpare him, to maintain him as a *cadet*, till his merit ſhould get him a commiſſion. But, though he would not accept, he did not forget the offer, nor make his obligations a cauſe of hatred, now that it was in his power to make ſome return; a way of thinking that proved the meanneſs of his birth; for, quitting the barren paths of military honour, he had turned his genius to the more thriving profeſſion of a footman; through the various aſcents of which he had riſen to his preſent rank of his *excellency*'s gentleman; in which he had the unfaſhionable gratitude to return the favours of his former benefactor in the above manner, which his experience and knowledge of his maſter's temper convinced him to be the only one he could hope to ſucceed in. As to his promiſe about the child, he was in no pain about that, there being no perſon who could contradict whatever excuſe he ſhould pleaſe to give.

There is one circumſtance, which I ſee puzzles you, in the character of this man, and that is his taking *me* from his friend, when he muſt be ſenſible how badly he could ſpare ſuch a ſum. But you muſt conſider the power of nature when ſtrengthened by habit.

From his mother, *William* had inherited venality, which the bribery of vails, in his preſent profeſſion, had confirmed beyond all poſſibility of correction; ſo that it was no more in his power to refuſe a guinea when offered to him, than to change his ſtature or complexion. An attention

Digitized by Google

attention to this obſervation would take off the wonder, and eaſe the world from the trouble of the exclamations that are daily made againſt the rapacity of perſons in office; for, as ſuch are generally taken from the claſs of *William*, it cannot be expected but they muſt act from the ſame natural principles with him.

I *ſee* the depravity of human nature, when ſtripped of diſguiſe and ornament, affects your unexperienced heart too ſtrongly. But conſider, that *we* ſee things as they really are, and to repreſent them otherwiſe to you would invert the deſign of my miſſion, and confirm, rather than remove the prejudices that lead aſtray the mind of man.

However, this conſolation I can give you, that the vices I have already drawn, and may hereafter draw to your view, are not particular to this age or country: they are the weeds which, in every age and clime, have always, and always will, over-run the human heart.

Nor is it juſt to call them vices (though in compliance with the language of men I do call them ſo) which *perhaps* are but * neceſſary parts of this univerſal ſyſtem; and though in a particular inſtance, and viewed by themſelves, they may appear deformed, yet, when thrown into the general repreſentation of things, they may have their beauty and uſe, if only to diverſify the ſcene: and, with reſpect to men in particular, be as † advantageous to the community as they are prejudicial to individuals.

But

* From hence it ſhould ſeem, the hint of a late treatiſe on the Origin of Evil, was borrowed, or elſe dictated by the ſame ſpirit.

† Fable of the bees.

Digitized by Google

But to return to my master *William*. Beside the advantages of education, he had such from nature, that he was not only the most accomplished *gentleman*, but also the handsomest fellow of his time; an happiness, of which he availed himself so well in the *polite* world, that he was the favourite of all the *compliant* fair, who shared with him the pleasures they only suffered from his superiors for hire.

Of this I saw sufficient proof that very evening, when he went to an assignation with the most celebrated courtesan of the age, who, sacrificing avarice to pleasure, gave orders to be denied to every body, and shut herself up with him, to give a loose to joy for the evening.

This was a scene too sensual for a spirit to describe: I shall therefore only say, that their fatigue and waste of spirits were recruited with the highest delicacies and richest wines, and the pauses of joy enlivened with the recital of the adventures of their professions, heightened with the most poignant ridicule of those whose folly was *their* fortune.

Before satiety could pall their pleasures, time summoned them to business. The fair, to prepare for the reception of her *friend*; and *my* master to wait on *his*; when, to conclude the evening with proper gallantry, he presented me to the maid at the door.

I was a good deal surprised, at being received with less emotion by the portress of *Venus* than I had ever found before; the sight of me having always raised joy. But this was soon explained, when, on returning to her mistress, she threw me on the table, and received a shilling in exchange. An instance of that methodical œconomy,

Digitized by Google

my, which by many ſmall ſavings makes up for one large expence, and extracts profit even from pleaſure.

The joy of the miſtreſs ſeemed to make amends to my vanity for the indifference of her maid, and promiſed me the full poſſeſſion of her heart; but I ſoon found myſelf miſtaken, and that her love for me was only while I was the property of another; for no ſooner did I become her own, than ſhe threw me careleſsly into her purſe, and turned her thoughts immediately to the acquiſition of more. But, though I loſt the greateſt part of my power over her, by coming into her poſſeſſion, I ſtill found ample room in her heart for my abode.

The apartments were ſcarce got in order, and my miſtreſs new dreſſed, when her *friend*, appeared, to whom ſhe flew with all the appearance of rapture. But, however he might be deceived, the difference was plain to me, between the joyleſs careſſes ſhe ſold to him, and the extaſy ſhe ſhared with my late maſter, the glow of whoſe kiſſes yet reeked upon her lips. Nor was this ſtrange: the ardor of her lover met her half way, and communicated as much fire as it received: but with her *keeper* the caſe was quite otherwiſe: all the advances were to come from her; all her careſſes were a duty; nor were the tendereſt ſhe could beſtow, able to warm him to the leaſt return.

You wonder, that a perſon in ſuch circumſtances ſhould be at the expence and trouble of *keeping* a miſtreſs, whoſe extravagance was to be equalled only by her inſolence. But this is only a ſmall inſtance of the tyranny of faſhion: and how will your aſtoniſhment be increaſed, when

Digitized by Google

when I tell you, that this very man, in the prime of life, was remarkable for the coolneſs of his conſtitution, and now in its decline was married to a beautiful young lady, whoſe reſentment at his conjugal neglect roſe ſo high, as to charge it to inability.

Whether this was really the caſe, and that he *kept* my miſtreſs to hide it, as a failing tradeſman ſets up a coach, or whether the paſſion remained, but ſo feebly ſupported, as to require the laſcivious blandiſhments of a proſtitute, I cannot determine, as I was never in his poſſeſſion, to take a view of his heart.

CHAP. III.

The manner in which CHRYSAL's *new miſtreſs received and took care of her friend. How ſhe employed herſelf while he was aſleep. Her management of him next morning.*

IT was about two in the morning, when my miſtreſs received him drunk and ſtupified with play, at which he had loſt deeply that night. On his coming into her room, he threw himſelf into a chair, without ſaying a word, or ſhewing the leaſt ſenſibility of her careſſes; where after ſome time he fell faſt aſleep, which my miſtreſs no ſooner perceived, than calling her maid to undreſs and roll him into bed, 'Here, *Jane*, 'ſaid ſhe, take my place by this heap of mor-'tality. I'll ſtep to ——— ſtreet; perhaps the 'company may not be all gone. Never fear, 'I'll inſure you from a rape! He wants nothing

'in

'in a bed fellow but to keep him warm, and you 'may do that, while I paſs my night better than 'in nurſing his infirmities: I'll be home before 'he ſtirs.'

Jane obeyed her miſtreſs, who ſlipped into a chair, and went away directly to an houſe, where ſhe uſed to piddle away her leiſure hours with any chance cuſtomers, rather than be idle.

About five ended this ſcene, in the rites of which my miſtreſs bore a diſtinguiſhed part. I ſhall not attempt to deſcribe theſe myſteries: they were too groſs for my relation, as well as your conception, in your preſent mortified habit. She then returned home, and laying her *pure* body in her maid's place, beſide her *friend*, who had not ſtirred yet, her fatigues ſoon threw her into a ſleep, as ſound as his.

It was noon before theſe fond lovers awoke: the firſt was my miſtreſs, who, enraged that any thing which bore the name of man, ſhould ſhew ſo little ſenſibility of her charms, reſolved to teize him with endearments, which, as he was ſeldom in a humour to return in kind, he never failed to pay for in a more ſubſtantial manner.

When ſhe had awoke him with her toying, the *ſyren* thus began her ſong: 'How can my 'deareſt ſleep ſo long, when his little girl lies 'languiſhing by his ſide! O turn, and let me 'lay my head on that dear boſom.'—'*Ha! what 'is it o'clock?* (replied the lover yawning, and rubbing his eyes)—'Alas, I know not! I have 'told ſo many tedious hours, that I have for-'got them: but what is time to us, who only 'live to love?'—'*Paſt twelve! I muſt be gone! 'ſome buſineſs.*'—'Buſineſs! leave that for duller 'ſouls, who have no taſte for pleaſure: can you

'leave

Digitized by Google

'leave love and me for buſineſs!'—'*I am ſorry*
'*I happened to overſleep myſelf, my dear; I believe*
'*I was bewitched to drink ſo much: but we'll make*
'*it up another time.*'—'So you ſay always; but
'that other time will never come: but I
'will not be ſerved ſo; I am fleſh and blood,
'whatever other people may be; and you
'yourſelf know, it is not for want of *friends* I
'keep myſelf up, thus like a nun, for you;
'and all, I do not know for what!'—'*Is the*
'*girl mad! Do not I give you every thing you*
'*want, every thing you deſire?*'—'No, nor any
'thing I deſire! I deſire now—So you will get
'up and leave me: I will not be uſed thus:
'you have got ſome other woman: but I here
'give you a fair warning, that I will be even
'with you! Sir *George* was here yeſterday;
'and ſo was the young lord—but I would not
'ſee either of them: and I am well requited
'now; but I know where to ſend to them: I
'will not be made a fool of every way, for no-
'thing; and ſo you may *ſleep* where you pleaſe,
'I care not.'——'*Come, my dear, let us not fall*
'*out for nothing; you have not ſhewn me the dia-*
'*mond ear-rings you got laſt week.*'—'No, my
'dear, they are not come home.'—'*I thought*
'*you told me they were finiſhed when I gave you the*
'*money to pay for them.*'—'They were ſo; but,
'when he brought them home, I did not like
'them. The jeweller told me, they were not
'ſo fine as thoſe he made for your lady, ſome
'time ago; ſo I ſent them back, and ordered
'him to make me a pair that ſhould be as good
'as her's at leaſt.'—'*Not good enough, child!*
'*were they not to coſt* 150l.?'—'And what is
'150l.?—Sir *Richard* gave his girl a pair that

'coſt

'coſt 500l.; but, if you think theſe are too dear, 'you are not obliged to pay for them: there is 'another, who will be glad to do it.'—'*And* 'pray what are theſe fine ones to coſt?'—'Why— 'only—but kiſs me firſt—only 200l. But then I 'have beſpoke a necklace with them'—'*Zounds,* 'a diamond necklace!'——'And what mighty 'matter is a diamond necklace? Pray has not 'your *wife* one? But I ſee how it it; you think 'any thing good enough for me; and nothing 'good enough for her: but every one does not 'think ſo: I am not at a loſs'——'*Well, you* 'ſaucy little minx; and what do they come to?'— 'Another kiſs, and I'll tell you:—why, don't 'frown; or I won't tell you at all;—only 500l. —500 *devils*; *that's more than my wife's coſt by* '100l.'—'And do not you love me a hundred 'times better than your wife? I have given up 'thouſands for you. But, as I ſaid before, you 'need not pay for them, if you do not chuſe it; 'there are others who will: I ſee I am ſlighted; 'and I deſerve it, for ſlighting ſo many good of- 'fers: but I will not always be a fool!'—'*Well,* '*my dear, for this one time I will humour you: give* '*me the pen and ink: but you muſt not expect that* '*I ſhall ever gratify your extravagance ſo far again.*' —'I thank you, my lord; I ſhall not trouble you 'again this great while. But what is this? 350l.! 'you have made a miſtake, my lord; I told 'you 500l.'—'*Well, child, did not I give you* '150 *to pay for the other pair?*'——'Yes, my 'lord; but that was not to pay for this pair 'though, you know theſe are dearer.'—'*But,* '*that and this will,*'—'I am afraid not.'—'*How* '*ſo, child*; do not 150 *and* 350 *make* 500?— 'Indeed I am a poor accountant; but I know it 'will

'will not do.'—'*No? why so; I do not understand you.*'—'I'll kiss you first, and then I'll tell you.'—'*Psha; cease fooling; I am in haste; I must go to court; and have scarce time to dress: where is the* 150*l.?*'—'There, (kissing him)—*Where?*'—'Gone, as that kiss is; all gone, and only the relish left behind, to give an appetite for more.'—'*Infernal jade!*'—(aside)—'What do you say, my lord?'—'*That I cannot, will not bear such extravagance.*'——'I am glad I know your mind, my lord: then if you do not, somebody else will, who will not make such a stir about trifles.'—'*Well, give me that bill.*'—'No, thank you, my dear.'——'*Why so?*'——'For fear you should be a bold boy, and not return it. If you please to give me the other 150*l.* I'll get the necklace and earrings, if not, this will serve for some other use.'—'*Damnation! and then I must give it to her all over again,* (aside) 'Well, my lord; you said you were in haste, and so am I.'—'*Give me the pen and ink: there it is, you little termagant: but once more let me caution you against such extravagance for the future.*'—'And once more, let me tell you, my lord, not to give yourself such airs: extravagance! they that will have delicacies must pay for them: and if you think the price too dear, there are more customers in the market; and so, my lord, like it, or like it not, I will be supported: and, more than that, what I want in pleasure, shall be made up in profit: let wives save, who may be the better for the savings, *our* business is to make hay while the sun shines.'——'*Come, my dear; let us have no disputes; you have the money now; next time we will clear off the*

'*other*

Digitized by Google

'*other ſcore: give me a kiſs, I'll call in the evening* '*and take a diſh of tea with you: farewell'*—— 'Good morrow———(*after he is gone*) for an 'old impotent, poor ſpirited letcher, that muſt be 'treated like a dog to make you know your duty. 'What fool would ever be at the trouble of be-'having well to any fellow when ſhe can, ſo 'much better, mould him to her pleaſure by ill 'uſage!'

CHAP. IV.

The hiſtory and character of CHRYSAL's *miſtreſs. She gives him to a noted matron. Some account of his new miſtreſs, and her manner of managing her family.*

THIS principle ſhe acted up to, for two days that I was in her poſſeſſion, without any other variation in her conduct, than juſt what was neceſſary to work on the various tempers of her lovers, making no real difference between them, except it was, that ſhe always uſed thoſe worſt, who uſed her beſt.

I have often told you, that ſenſuality is diſagreeable to a ſpiritual being. I therefore longed to quit this miſtreſs, the ſucceſſion of whoſe amours was ſo conſtant and quick, that I was aſtoniſhed how nature could afford a fund of love for them all, in ſo young a creature, for ſhe was not twenty years old.—I ſee you have a curioſity to know the hiſtory of this young votary of *Venus*, in which you think there muſt be ſomething extraordinary;

traordinary; but you are deceived; it contains nothing but common occurrences.

She was the daughtei of tradeſpeople, in moderate circumſtances, whoſe fooliſh fondneſs, becauſe ſhe was a pretty, ſmart child, gave her an education above her rank, in hopes of her making her fortune by marriage.

This raiſed the vanity, natural to the female heart, ſo high, that ſhe deſpiſed her own ſtation, and not being ſo fortunate as immediately to climb to the one ſhe deſired, by the way propoſed, ſhe fell an eaſy victim to the firſt ſeducer who promiſed it, in any other.

Thus the accompliſhments, by which the injudicious tenderneſs of her parents meant to raiſe her into a rank higher than their own, became the cauſe of her falling into that of the loweſt of all human beings: a fall, though deplorable in itſelf, yet unaffecting to her, as the time, in which her mind ſhould have been formed to virtue, was given up to the nouriſhing that vanity which proved her ruin; ſo that ſhe is abſolutely inſenſible of the wretchedneſs of her condition, and never has the purſuit of her moſt infamous profeſſion diſturbed by a moment's remorſe.

I told you of her ſpending the hours that were unemployed at home, at an houſe in ——ſtreet, where ſhe was always ſure of buſineſs. Though this venerable manſion was dedicated to the myſterious rites of unreſtrained love, yet, as the prieſts of all temples expect to live by the offerings made at them, her conſcience would not permit the prieſteſs of this to break through an ordinance ſo long eſtabliſhed, and ſhe exacted fees from the votaries of her's: not indeed a tythe, indiſcriminately from all, whether they received benefit from

Digitized by Google

from their devotion, or not; but always in proportion to the fruits they reaped.

At this ſhrine was I offered, the third night of my being in the poſſeſſion of this young devotee, when the plenteouſneſs of her gain, from a multitude of lovers, ſeemed, to her piety, to merit ſo rich a return.

I now entered into a much more extenſive ſcene than my laſt, the proſtitution of which made but a ſmall part of the buſineſs of the profeſſion. But what I have related, in the hiſtory of my late miſtreſs, ſhall ſuffice for that branch, nor ſhall I give more than ſome outlines of the horrors of the reſt.

My new miſtreſs had originally been of the ſiſterhood of my laſt, who having fallen a prey to luſt, almoſt in her infancy, and having no beauty, nor any thing but extreme youth to recommend her, as ſoon as that was worn out, neglect obliged her to apply to other buſineſs for bread, and her natural turn determining her to this, as well as the outrageous virtue of the *undiſcovered* part of her own ſex, excluding her from every other, ſhe changed her occupation, from *yielding* to *providing* pleaſure, in which her ſucceſs was ſo great, that ſhe ſoon became the moſt eminent of her profeſſion.

It was near five in the morning when I changed my ſervice; and, buſineſs being ended, my late miſtreſs having reigned *ſole miſtreſs* of the night, and ſeen out all the company, there remained nothing to do, after ſhe went home, but to ſee the inmates to their truckle-beds in the cock-lofts, where ſtripping off every part, not only of the finery, but even of the comforts of dreſs, they were crowded three or four together, to keep

Digitized by Google

keep each other warm under a ragged coverlet, upon a bare mattreſs, where their ſhudderings and groans made a juſt contraſt to the ſpirited wickedneſs of their converſation ſome hours before.

This was always the fate of thoſe who were not ſo ſucceſsful in the evening as to earn the price of a better bed, above the fees of the houſe, and hire of cloaths.

Theſe happy few were treated with fondneſs, while they ſquandered their poor *peculium* in a drop of cordial to ſettle their heads, and were lodged in apartments ſuited to their purſes; though the night before perhaps they had experienced the ſame fate with their ſiſters above ſtairs, and knew they muſt expect it again the next, if unſucceſsful in their buſineſs.

When matters were thus ſettled, this happy family diſpoſed themſelves to take the beſt repoſe which diſeaſe in mind and body would permit.

An active ſpirit diſdains reſt. Though debauchery had anticipated old age, in the conſtitution of my miſtreſs, yet her application to buſineſs made her refuſe nature even neceſſary indulgence. She was ready to go out before ten that morning, when the modeſt decency of her dreſs and appearance were ſuch as drew the general good opinion, and would almoſt deceive the *devil* himſelf, on whoſe moſtfavou rite ſervice ſhe was going.

CHAP

Digitized by Google

CHAP. V.

CHRYSAL's *miſtreſs pays a viſit to the laſt place ſhe could have been ſuſpected for going to. She meets a young lady with whom, by an artifice, ſhe goes home. Her ſchemes to enſnare the lady.*

IF a judgment were to be formed for the whole day, from the manner of beginning it, my miſtreſs ſhould have ſpent her's moſt happily; her firſt viſit being to church, where the piety of her behaviour was an edification to the devout matrons, who, having nothing to do at home, meet there regularly, to compare their achs and dreams of the night before, and enjoy the innocent amuſement of a little goſſiping over the affairs of their neighbours.

But her devotion waſted not itſelf ſo fruitleſly: her induſtry had formed expectations of drawing conſiderable advantage from it, and ſo anticipating futurity, and making ſure of the reward here, which others waited for in another world.--The immediate motive of her devotion, this morning, was to ſee a young lady with whom ſhe had commenced an acquaintance at this church, and who conſtantly attended divine ſervice there. You are ſurprized how he could think of going to ſuch a place, on ſuch an errand; but the wolf roams about for prey every where, and is often moſt ſucceſsful, where his attempts are leaſt ſuſpected: though I muſt rob her induſtry of the merit of deſign in the firſt introduction to this affair.

Going

Digitized by Google

Going through St. *Martin's-Lane*, one morning about a month before, she was so struck with the appearance of a lovely young creature, in widow's weeds, who was going into the church, that she followed her; where the fervency, with which she poured out her soul in devotion, gave such a a lustre to her beauty, and made it shine so lovely through her grief, that my mistress immediately marked her for her *list*, not doubting but she should be able to turn her distress to such advantage, as should bring her into her measures, and make her beauty yield her a rich return for her pains, from some of her customers. If you consider the nature of woman-kind, you will not wonder at this instance of the profligacy of my mistress. They are ever in extremes; either the best or worst of human creatures.—From church she dogged her to her lodging, in a little court, where she lived with a poor, but honest family, in such privacy, that no one in the neighbourhood could give any account of her.

Real virtue shines with a lustre, that dazzles the most confirmed vice, and keeps it at an awful distance. My mistress, harden'd as she was in all the ways of sin and impudence, dared not to go directly to her, without some business or introduction: but, as she had not either, her ready genius prompted her to win her good opinion, under an appearance of religion, and then an acquaintance would come easily.

She was not deceived in her expectations: a few mornings constant attendance at church, and the exemplary warmth of her devotions, struck the eye, and opened the heart of unexperienced innocence to the acquaintance she wished

wiſhed for, which ſhe did not fail to improve, by the ſame arts, to ſome degree of intimacy.

In this ſituation they were, when ſhe went, but without any appearance of deſign, to meet her this morning at church, as uſual. As they came out together, my miſtreſs, turning with her fair *friend*, ſaid ſhe had ſome buſineſs into *Long-Acre*, and aſked her, if ſhe went that way, to which the young lady innocently anſwered, that ſhe did, and ſhould be glad to walk with her.

As they walked together, my miſtreſs turned her converſation on the wicked ways of the town, and particularly the many baſe deſigns that were laid to inſnare unwary innocence, adding, that all the pleaſure which ſenſuality could give the moſt luxurious heart, muſt fall infinitely ſhort of what ſhe felt at that very moment, in the deſign ſhe was then going upon, of relieving the diſtreſſes of a worthy family.

She had timed her diſcourſe ſo as to ſay theſe words, juſt as ſhe came to the entrance of the court, in which ſhe knew the widow lived, when, feigning to ſlip, ſhe fell all along, crying out, as in the utmoſt agony, that ſhe had wrenched her ancle.

The lady raiſing her with the greateſt tenderneſs, expreſſed her concern for the unhappy accident, and deſired ſhe would ſubmit to be helped into *her* lodgings, which fortunately were at the next door, where, though ſhe could be but poorly accommodated, ſhe might be more at her eaſe than in a more ſumptuous place, and ſhould have all the care in her power. This was juſt what my miſtreſs had ſchemed for, who, courteouſly

accepting the offer, made a ſhift to limp in, without any other aſſiſtance than her's.

It raiſed my indignation to ſee the tenderneſs with which the beautiful young creature pulled off her ſhoe and ſtocking, and chafed her ancle, thrown away upon ſo unworthy an object, as it did my abhorrence to hear the counterfeit ſhrieks and groans of my miſtreſs, and the aſſurance with which ſhe attributed the ſwellings cauſed by debauchery to this immediate accident.

This affrighted the young lady ſo, that ſhe in a manner forced her to ſend for a ſurgeon, which with much intreaty ſhe yielded to do; but it muſt be for a *friend* of her own, a gentleman who lived a conſiderable way off, at the polite end of the town, for ſhe could not think of letting any *common low-lived* fellow come near her.

Upon this a porter was directly diſpatched for her *own* ſurgeon, and in the mean time, as ſhe began to grow eaſier, ſhe recovered her ſpirits, and renewed the converſation that had been broken off by this accident.

'I was telling you, my dear friend (ſaid ſhe) 'for ſo I ſhall ever call you from this moment, 'your kindneſs having compleated the conqueſt 'which your beauty had before made of my 'heart, I was telling you, that I was going 'to viſit a family this morning, where I pro- 'miſed myſelf the higheſt joy that a human 'heart is capable of feeling, in lightening the 'diſtreſs of the virtuous, by ſharing with them 'ſome of that wealth which Heaven has abun- 'dantly bleſſed me with, and which can juſtly 'be applied to no other uſe, than making this 'grateful return to that goodneſs which beſtow- 'ed it.

'But

'But my heart was too elate with the thought, 'and I received this accident as a caution from 'Heaven not to flatter myself with any thing so 'strongly for the future. But, though I could 'not have this pleasure myself, the benefit shall 'not be delayed to them. I will make you my '*almoner*; an office that I know will suit the 'goodness of your heart. You shall give this 'packet, which will put an end to all their 'distresses.

'Oh, madam! your good opinion is the 'greatest honour to me (replied the lady) and I 'hope I shall never forfeit it, especially in this 'commission, which I shall undertake with the 'most sincere joy; but pray, dear madam, who 'are the persons to whom I must dispense your 'goodness?"

'That's true, my dear (returned my mistress) 'I should give you some account of them, that 'you may be the better able to judge of the 'joy I feel in serving them. It is the widow 'of an officer, who has been killed in this war, 'and left her with three poor babes, destitute of 'every support but the allowance of the go-'vernment, which, wretched as it is, and only 'aggravating misery by barely prolonging life 'under it, is often gasped for by the hungry 'mouth in vain, where interest is wanting to 'procure the immediate relief of it, as was her 'unhappy case, so that they must have actually 'perished for want of food, had not Providence 'brought them into my knowledge, seemingly 'by the greatest accident, about six months ago, 'since when, I have myself afforded them the 'necessary comforts of life, and have also made 'such interest for them, with some of my friends,

'that I have here got them a grant of a penſion 'on the *Iriſh eſtabliſhment*, ſufficient to bring up 'the children, and make the remainder of the 'mother's days happy; for, my dear, I never 'do any thing by halves—Good God! child, 'what is the matter with you? What do you 'weep ſo for?'

'*Nothing, dear madam* (replied the lady) *no-* 'thing; *I only ſympathize in the diſtreſs of the poor* 'widow.'——'But, my dear, that diſtreſs is 'now at an end'——'*O madam, let me carry* 'her the bleſſing! let me not delay her happineſs a 'moment! Who knows but her heart is this minute 'burſting with the dreadful apprehenſions of want 'for herſelf, and her dearer infants!*'—'With all 'my heart, madam; but you will pleaſe to 'order a chair to be called to carry me home, 'when you go; for I cannot ſtay *here* alone.' —'*Dear madam, forgive my rudeneſs; I beg your* 'pardon, *pray forgive me: the diſtreſs of the widow* 'put every thing out of my head; *indeed it did; pray* 'excuſe me.'——'Excuſe you, my dear, I ho- 'nour the heart that feels another's woe; you 'ſhall go directly; you ſhall be the meſſenger 'of glad tidings to them. But, my deareſt 'young lady, give me leave to tell you, that I 'fear you have not anſwered me ſincerely; I fear 'your tears flow from ſome other cauſe, than 'mere ſympathy; ſpeak, my child! does any 'thing affect your own heart? Can I any way 'be ſerviceable to you? Command me freely, 'and make me happy in ſerving one for whom 'my heart has conceived ſo tender an eſteem! 'Speak as you would to your own mother, and 'wrong not my friendſhip with a doubt.'—— '*O madam, madam!* (replied the mourner, as

'ſoon

Digitized by Google

'soon as ſobbing permitted utterance) *I have* 'no mother to make my complaint to; *I am the* 'wretched widow you have deſcribed! *A widow,* 'without ſupport, without friends, *or any other* 'hope than juſt in Heaven;'—'And heaven will 'raiſe you friends, my deareſt child! Heaven 'has raiſed you a friend in me! You ſhall be '*my* child! I look upon you as my own! as a 'gift from Heaven, from this moment! You 'ſhall leave this place this very day! it is not 'fit for *my* child! I will take a lodging for you 'near myſelf, till *my nephew*, who is lately come 'to town to ſee me, goes home; and then you 'ſhall live with me for ever.'

Saying theſe words, ſhe threw her arms round her deſtined victim, and wiped away the tears that flowed down her cheeks, while a variety of paſſions filled her tender heart almoſt to burſting.

CHAP. VI.

The hiſtory of the young lady. She is critically interrupted by the arrival of an unexpected perſon. She is reconciled to her father, who rewards the woman of the houſe, and reſolves to puniſh the bawd.

WHEN ſhe had recovered herſelf, a little, my miſtreſs thus reſumed her lore, 'Weep 'not, my deareſt child, all will be well. And 'have you any dear little infants too?'—'*Oh* 'no! *my wretchedneſs, thank heaven, is all my own!*' —'But may I, my dear, aſk your name, and 'the circumſtances of your ſtory! I would know

'all, that nothing may be unredreſſed.'——— 'You are all goodneſs, madam! My ſtory, alas, has 'few circumſtances, and they are all diſtreſſes! I loſt 'my mother while I was yet a child: my father left 'me in the country to the care of a governeſs, the 'wife of his chaplain, who educated me in the ſen-'timents of piety and virtue. When I was ſcarce 'fourteen I returned the love of her ſon, the moſt 'deſerving and moſt lovely of his ſex, who was two 'years older than me: but, young as we were, we 'concealed our paſſion, till my father obtained him 'a commiſſion in the army; when, on the regiment's 'being ordered to America, I yielded to his fear of 'loſing me, and conſented to a private marriage, 'which was ſoon diſcovered by a letter's falling in-'to my father's hands, who, in his rage, turned my 'huſband's father and mother, and me, out of 'doors, nor would ever ſee us more. A ſmall vi-'carage afforded us a preſent ſupport. My mother-'in-law ſoon died; the ſuſpicion of her having be-'trayed the confidence of my father, and been in-'ſtrumental in my marriage, breaking her heart; 'as did the account of my huſband's death, his fa-'ther's. I then was left quite deſtitute; and have 'ſince ſupported a wretched being by my work, 'which the honeſt woman of this houſe takes in for 'me, without the leaſt hope of relief in this world, 'till your goodneſs has, this day, taken compaſſion 'on me.'——'And what is your father's name, 'my dear?'—'That I have never yet revealed, as 'I would willingly hide the diſgrace my diſtreſs 'may be thought to him; but with you I need not 'uſe that caution; his name is'———

Juſt at this word, the ſurgeon, who had been ſent for to my miſtreſs, entered, and preſented a new ſcene.

At

Digitized by Google

At the first sight of this person, the young lady gave a great shriek, and swooned away. The gentleman stood a moment stupified with astonishment, when turning hastily to my mistress, 'Is 'this the lady?! (said he)—' Aye, and a lovely 'one she is (answered she) but help me to raise 'her up, when you will see her better; she has 'been just telling me her story, and the grief of 'it has overcome her! it is a moving one; and 'she must be our own.'——

'*O my child! my child!*' (exclaimed he in a transport) and, spurning my mistress from her with his feet, raised her himself, and leaned her head upon his bosom, kissing her, and almost smothering her with his tears. '*Oh, my poor* '*child! what have you escaped! what have you* '*endured!*

It is impossible to describe the situation of my mistress at this scene. She saw the error she had been guilty of, in introducing a woman to whom she was a stranger; and was aware of the danger with which the horror of such an interview on such an occasion threatened her. While therefore, the father seemed wrapped in an extasy that made him as insensible as his daughter, she thought it the best way to retire from the first burst of his anger, and, forgetting her sprained ancle, was going directly away; but he perceived her intent, and calling her with a voice that nailed her to the ground. 'Stir not, upon your 'life (said he) I will have this whole mystery 'cleared up.'

His daughter, just then, opening her eyes, and finding herself laid upon her father's bosom, love, respect, duty, fear, and joy, filled her heart with

ſuch a variety of paſſions, that ſhe ſunk under their weight, and ſwooned away.

This embarraſſed the father almoſt to diſtraction, till the woman of the houſe coming in, with her aſſiſtance ſhe was at length recovered, for my miſtreſs was ſo terrified, that ſhe did not dare to approach her.

As ſoon as the lady had lightened her heart by a flood of tears, ſhe threw herſelf at her father's feet, unable either to look up, or ſpeak to him. Moved with the mute eloquence of her grief, and melting in the warmth of nature, he raiſed her from the ground, and ſpoke to her in theſe words: 'Be comforted, my child! I am! I will be your 'father! But tell me what has paſſed between 'you and this vile woman!'—'*Oh, Sir, is ſhe 'not my beſt, my only friend? Has ſhe not reſtored 'me to your love?*'—'Have a care, child! ſhe 'your friend? then you are loſt beyond recovery 'indeed! She is a reproach to her ſex! to hu-'man nature!'——'*Oh, Sir! how can that be? 'did ſhe not bring you here to me? does not that 'ſhew her virtue and compaſſion to my diſtreſs?*'—'Compoſe yourſelf a little, child! it is true, 'ſhe brought me here; but tell me, I charge 'you, on what terms ſhe told you I was to 'come; and how ſhe came to intereſt herſelf in 'your affairs! Fear not, but ſpeak the truth.'

On this ſhe told him the whole of her acquaintance with my miſtreſs, and by what accident and in what character ſhe imagined he had been ſent for; but that, as ſoon as ſhe ſaw *him* enter the room, ſhe thought my miſtreſs muſt have been acquainted with her ſtory, and had taken this method of introducing her to him, in hopes the

Digitized by Google

the ſurprize, and ſight of her diſtreſs, might operate on his compaſſion.

Truth forces conviction. He was ſatisfied with the account ſhe gave him; and taking her again in his arms, 'I have found you again, my 'child (ſaid he) and I will never loſe you more! 'Be the errors of your youth, be my ſeverity 'forgotten! From henceforth you are *my* child, 'and I will be *your* father? as to that vile wretch, 'know, that her whole acquaintance with you 'was ſought with a premeditated deſign of betraying you to ruin. She told me the whole, 'nearly as you have done: and encouraged by 'your diſtreſs, of which ſhe had gotten ſome 'general hints, but ignorant who you were, 'ſhe laid the ſcheme of this pretended accident, 'to get admiſſion into your houſe; for ſhe well 'knew where you lived, and then ſent for me 'to a place I had appointed, that I might come 'and ſee you, under the appearance of a ſurgeon; that if I liked you, I might have the 'preference of her intereſt in you: for ſo deep 'had ſhe laid her ſcheme, that you could not 'have eſcaped her: the trial would have been 'too great for human fortitude! and this moſt 'execrable myſtery of iniquity did ſhe undertake 'for the paultry reward of 50*l.* which I muſt 'take the ſhame upon myſelf to own, I had promiſed her, little imagining that I was bargaining for the ſeduction of my own innocent child. 'But I ſee, I acknowledge the hand of Heaven 'in this whole affair, that has thus opened my 'eyes to the danger of ſuch a licentious courſe 'of life, and made the recovery of my child the 'means, and the reward of my converſion?'

Digitized by Google

'Weep not, my dear; juſtly may you turn 'your eyes with deteſtation from ſuch a fiend: 'But I ſhall take care that ſhe meets a juſt re-'ward; while you prepare to go home with me, 'for I will not leave you a moment in this ſcene 'of horror'.—'Oh, mercy, mercy, my lord! '(cried my miſtreſs) have mercy on me! nor 'overwhelm with your anger a wretched crea-'ture, whoſe remorſe is a load too great to 'bear.'——'Away, vile wretch (replied he in a 'rage) nor dare to ſpeak another word! and 'here fellow (calling to the porter who had di-'rected him to the houſe) bring me the pariſh-'conſtable.'

While the porter went for him, my miſtreſs, wretched now indeed, her guilty fear magnifying her danger, ſtood trembling, but afraid to aſſay his pity with another word.

After he had walked a turn or two about the room, his daughter entered, and with her the woman of the houſe with her little effects, which were ſoon packed up; at the ſight of them his countenance ſoftened: 'Well, my dear (ſaid 'he to his daughter) I ſee you are ready to 'come with me; but I muſt wait a moment to 'do juſtice to the wretch who brought me hi-'ther. Plead not for her! I would not have 'you ever ſue to me in vain, again; and to any 'thing in her favour I cannot yield! But my 'juſtice ſhall not only be ſevere, nor confined 'to her alone. You have ſaid that this honeſt 'woman has been a friend to you! ſhe ſhall be 'rewarded. Here, good woman, is the ſum of 'money I was to have given this vile creature 'for my daughter in another ſenſe. Take it as 'the reward of your honeſty and kindneſs to her;

'and

'and call on her every year of your life for the 'same sum.'

The poor woman took it with reverence, but was unable to speak her gratitude, her heart was so full, while his daughter dropped suddenly on her knees, and, raising her hands and eyes to Heaven, exclaimed in rapture, *Oh pour thy blessings, Heaven, on his head, who thus dispenses happiness on all who merit it.*—As she said these words, the constable came, into whose charge his lordship gave my mistress to be taken to a justice of the peace, whither he appointed to follow her; and then handed his daughter into a coach, in which he took her directly home.

CHAP. VII.

The address of CHRYSAL's *mistress, and civility of a constable. She arrives at the justice's, and is sifted and softened by his clerk, and terrified by his worship.* CHRYSAL *changes his service.*

AS soon as this happy couple were gone, my mistress recovered her spirits, and smiled with contempt at a danger she had often gone through before, without harm. 'And so (says 'she) master constable, I am given in charge to 'you! and for what pray? But I am no such 'novice as to yield myself a prisoner, till I see 'proper authority to hold me; therefore, Sir, I 'shall wish you a good morning: if you please, 'you may go tell his lordship, that I was not at 'leisure to wait for him at the justice's; and, 'because

'because you may be dry after your walk, here 'is a crown to drink my health.'

'I thank you, mistress (replied the magistrate, 'taking the money) but, in the mean time, you 'must come! I am sorry I cannot let you go.'— '*Cannot let me go? pray, Sir, where is your author-* 'rity to keep me?'—'Here, mistress!' (producing his staff)——'*But your warrant!*'—— 'Oh! as for that, I'll make bold to do without one this time, and take you to the justice 'on my own authority, and his lordship's request; and so, mistress, you had better come 'along, for I am in haste: you may have a coach 'if you please.'——'*Aye, so I will, to carry me* 'home! *and here's something for you to pay the* 'coachman' (putting a guinea in his hand.)— 'Tis very well, mistress, I will see you safe 'home, to be sure, if you desire it, and the 'justice gives you leave; for to him we must 'go directly.'——*Then give me my money; and* 'be assured you shall answer for this false impri-'sonment.'—'Your money, mistress! why, aye! 'so I will, if I do not earn it.'—'*Then let me* 'go home this moment.'—'No, no, mistress! that 'I cannot do till you have been to visit his 'worship; and then I will see you safe home, if 'he gives me leave, and drink your health into 'the bargain; and that was what you gave me 'the money for: come, come, mistress! one of 'your trade should know better things than to 'ask for money back again! Have I not shewed 'you all the *civility* in my power? Do you think 'I would stand preaching with you here this 'hour for nothing! come along, the coach is at 'the door.'

I *saw*

I *saw* you were surprized at the address and turn of expression in my mistresses's conversation with this young lady, before the arrival of her father, as above her sphere; but nature had given her a capacity equal to any thing, and her intercourse with the *polite* world had gained her an ease of behaviour, and elegance of expression, that made every condition of life seem natural to her. As to the story of the family, whom she was going to relieve, she had actually prepared one of her confederates to have acted that part, so that the lord might justly say, her design was laid so well, that it was next to impossible for her to miss of success. For, by this deceit, she would have gained the young lady's confidence, to receive favours from her, and, when she had her in her debt, she thought she could make her own terms.

As soon as my mistress and her conductor were come into the antichamber of justice, the clerk, recognizing her, addressed her thus: 'Good-'morrow, mistress—pray what has got us the 'favour of your company! You have been so 'great a stranger of late, that I was beginning 'to think we had lost you.—'Pray, Sir (said 'she) let me speak a word with you in the next 'room.'—On which he ordered her to be shewn in, and only waited to ask the constable, by whom, and for what she was sent there, who was able to give him no other answer, than that the lord had ordered him to bring her, and said he would follow himself directly.

Having got this *full* information, the clerk came into the room to my mistress, and told her, with a look of importance and concern, that he was sorry to see her on so bad an account.—'So

'bad

Digitized by Google

'bad an account, Sir! (ſaid ſhe) why! pray 'what do you think I am brought here for? no-'thing in this world! they can charge me with 'nothing but intention; and I hope that is not 'puniſhable by the law!'—'I hope it will ap-'pear ſo (replied he) but (ſhrugging up his 'ſhoulders) my lord has ſent a meſſage here, 'that has another appearance!'——'*And pray, 'Sir, what does my lord charge me with?*'——— 'You'll excuſe my revealing the ſecrets of a 'privy-counſellor! He will be here too ſoon, I 'am afraid, to tell you himſelf.'

Verſed as my miſtreſs was in all the wiles of man, the look and manner of his ſaying theſe words alarmed her conſcious fears. 'Pray, Sir '(ſaid ſhe) what has his lordſhip ſaid? or, if 'you do not think proper to tell me that, at 'leaſt, you can direct me how to make the beſt 'defence againſt his deſigns! I ſhall not be un-'grateful! you know I never was.'—'Why 'that's true, madam (replied he) and indeed I 'ſhould take great pleaſure in ſerving you, and 'getting you out of this *hole*, but my lord, you 'know, is a great man, and can, in a manner, 'do what he pleaſes with poor people.'—'*Pray, 'Sir, can I ſpeak a word to the juſtice?*'——— 'I fear he is engaged juſt now; beſides, it is 'ſo long ſince he has ſeen or heard from you, 'that I believe you muſt expect but little favour 'from him.'———'*Why that is the very thing I 'would ſpeak to him about; and believe me, it was 'my buſineſs out ſo early this morning, till I was de-'layed by this unlucky accident.*'——'As for that 'matter, you know you may ſay any thing to 'me, as well as to him, and I can tell him.'— '*That is true, why, all I have to ſay to him, at*

'*preſent,*

'*preſent, is to beg his acceptance of theſe five guineas* '*for his paſt favours, and his advice how to get out* '*of this ſcrape; and pray do you take theſe three for* '*your trouble. I am ſorry I have no more to offer,* '*but really the times are very bad, and little or no* '*money ſtirring among the gentlemen; beſide, all my* '*ladies have been very unlucky of late, and the doctor,* '*you know, muſt be always paid in hand.*'—'I am 'ſorry things go ſo badly with you; I will ſpeak 'to the juſtice, and let you know what he ſays, 'and you may depend on my friendſhip, and in-'tereſt at all times; though I am afraid this is a 'very bad affair. I will go to him directly, and 'return to you as ſoon as poſſible.'

I here left my miſtreſs to her meditations, having been one of the pieces ſhe had given to the clerk. You may imagine I was glad to leave ſuch a ſervice, though I could not promiſe myſelf much pleaſure; beſide variety, in the exchange from what I had already ſeen of that, which I was entering into.

The juſtice was in his office, buſied in examining the informations of ſome of his people, who had made ſome lucky *hits* the evening before. On a wink from his clerk, they were all ordered to withdraw, when reaching *me*, and four more of my brethren to his worſhip; Here, Sir (ſaid he) is five guineas from Mrs. ———.' ——'*So then* (replied he) *ſhe has thought proper* '*to come at laſt.*'—'To come? no, no, Sir! ſhe 'has been brought, or elſe I believe you would 'have hardly ſeen her.'—'*The ungrateful jade;* '*but what is the matter now?*'——'I really can-'not well tell; nor does the conſtable know 'any more, than that my lord ——— ordered 'him to bring her, and ſaid that he ſhould

'follow

'follow himself.——'*My lord! then I must be ready to receive him properly: He is a great man: quick! reach me my green velvet cap, red slippers, and new gown, and open half a score of those books, the largest of them, and lay them on that great table, as if I had been referring. There! now I look like a justice! and bid those gentry, I was speaking to, go backwards till my lord is gone: He must not see such faces; they might prejudice him against us; and he is a great man: so! now I'll open the* NEW JUSTICE, *and his lordship may come as soon as he pleases.*'

Just as all things were thus prepared for his lordship's reception, in proper formality, a servant brought a note from him, to let his worship know, he could not come himself that morning, but desired he would take proper care of the woman he had ordered to be taken before him, who kept an house of bad fame in such a street, where, upon the least enquiry, he would not fail to find sufficient matter against her, from her neighbours.

Though his lordship's not coming was a disappointment to his worship, after the preparations he had made to receive him; and balked him of an important advertisement for the next morning; yet the general wording of this note gave him some consolation, as it might seem to authorize any measures he might please to take, to squeeze the criminal before him—'This may 'do (said he to the clerk) this may do some-'thing: but we must proceed with caution, for 'Mrs. ——— is an old *hand:* let her be called 'in; I'll *soften* her a little first, and then you 'may work upon her after as you please.'

As

As soon as she came in, his worship accosted her thus:—'So mistress; this is a fine affair; 'I knew what your doings would come to, at 'last; I have often warned you; but you would 'take no advice; and now you see the conse- 'quence!—Do, make her *mittimus!* I must 'wait upon his lordship; and I cannot go till 'she is committed!——' *Committed! dear your 'worship, for what must I be committed? I have 'done nothing.*'—'No! to be sure, you have done 'nothing! his lordship would prosecute you so 'severely for nothing: Look at this letter! do 'you know this hand-writing? His lordship has 'here given me an account of the whole affair, 'and desired that I would proceed against you 'with the utmost rigour of the law! I have al- 'ready sent to search your house.'

This word completed the terrors, into which the sight of his lordship's well-known hand had thrown her; and deprived her of all resolution and presence of mind. She burst into tears, and throwing herself on her knees, 'Oh, good your 'worship! dear Mr. Clerk (said she) advise me: 'assist me to get over this misfortune! here is 'my watch; it cost 50l. at a pawnbroker's but 'a month ago; it is a repeater! take it, Mr. 'Justice! Mr. Clerk, here are my rings! they 'are the only valuable things I have: take them, 'and help me out at this dead lift: send, and 'stop the people from going into my poor house; 'I shall be *blown up*: the gentlemen will all de- 'sert me: I shall be ruined, just when I have 'brought things to a little bearing: help me but 'this once, and I never will give you cause to 'complain of me again: I will always be punc- 'tual to my promise.'

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

She is discharged on proper bail. The labours of CHRYSAL's *new master, in the service of the public, with some of the various mysteries of his office.*

THE work was now done, and a wink having settled the *affair* between the justice and his clerk, the latter began thus: 'If I may presume to advise your worship, though this is a very bad affair to be sure, yet as it is not quite felony, *by the statute*, I am humbly of opinion, that if bail could be got.'—'*Dear Mr. Clerk, I am obliged to you.*'—'But then consider, my lord is a great man.'—'That is true, please your worship; but the law is greater than any man, and the law is very tender of the liberty of the subject, and says expressly *in the statute in favore libertis*, that no person shall be confined that can get bail; and beside, who knows, if she was at liberty, but she might find means to be reconciled to his lordship; and so all would be well.'———'*Dear, Mr. Clerk, that is true; I would easily be reconciled to him; I know how to gain his favour, when his anger is a little cooled.*'—'Why, Mistress, if you are quite sure of that, I believe we may venture to bail you: but, Where are your friends?'———'*Dear your worship, I have no friends; I have nothing to make friends with; I throw myself upon you, gentlemen!*'———'Why really this is a nice case, but if you'll step into

'the

'the next room, we will consider what can be 'done for you.'—'*Oh! but send and stop the men 'that went to my house!*'——'Never fear, they 'were not to go without further orders.'

When she was gone out, 'Well (said the 'justice) this has been a good *hit*, it makes up 'for the bad week: but cannot you guess what 'this matter is?'——'Not a word of it (re-'plied the clerk) she has not dropped a syllable 'herself, that could let me the least into it, and 'I would not discover my ignorance by asking 'her any questions. But I suppose it is only 'some trick she has played my lord about a girl, 'for you know she has often told us, that he 'was one of her best customers, and boasted of 'his protection; and if it is no more than that, 'as I imagine, he will think no more of it, and 'so the best way is to let her go, for indeed we 'cannot keep her, if we would; though, to keep 'up the form, for fear she should *smell* us out, 'she must have some bail; and therefore I'll go 'and fill a bond, and make a couple of our peo-'ple put on their BAILING CLOATHS, and come 'and sign with her, though I do not think she 'has money left to pay for the bond, or make 'the fellows drink: but she has done pretty well 'already, that is the truth.'

Saying this, he went out, and in a little time returned with my late mistress, and two of the fellows, the shabbiness of whose appearance had made his worship order them out of the lord's sight just before, now dressed out like reputable housekeepers, who gravely signed with my mistress, without ever asking what; and, upon her returning a negative shrug, to a wink from the clerk, went out, without a word.

The

The buſineſs was now over, and my late miſtreſs diſmiſſed to follow her occupation, and make up, by double diligence, for the misfortunes of that morning, only with an aſſurance to the clerk, that ſhe would remember his kindneſs, and be *punctual* for the future.

I was now entered into a ſervice, where I had an opportunity of ſeeing into the whole myſtery of juſtice: but you muſt not expect that I ſhould reveal all the ſecrets of ſo venerable a trade: though I may give a few general hints for your information, in ſo abſtruſe and intricate a ſcience.

The affair of my late miſtreſs was the laſt of that morning; my worſhipful maſter putting *me* into his purſe, and going directly to dinner, which had *waited* for him ſome time. But, tho' his fare was good, his care for the public would not permit him to make long meals, or debauch away his time. After a ſhort refreſhment of only two hours, he returned to his office, where he reaſſumed his labours, in all the various branches of his extenſive employment.——The firſt thing he looked into was the *informations*, which the affair of my miſtreſs had interrupted in the morning, as I told you before: when calling his people, one after another, before him, he went through them regularly, in this manner: 'Jo*hn Gibbet*, you here inform me that you have found out the perſon who took the gentleman's hat, in the quarrel in *Chelſea* fields, laſt *Sunday* evening, which you think to make a robbery of: let me hear the circumſtances of that affair, for you are ſo keen a blood-hound, when you get upon any ſcent, that you are for making every thing robbery, be the caſe what it will.'

'Pleaſe

'Pleaſe your worſhip (replied *Gibbet*, turning 'the *quid* in his cheek, and ſquirting out the 'juice) I do all things for the beſt, and that you 'know; and that I have brought many things to 'bear, which nobody elſe would undertake, as 'witneſs that affair on *Shuter's-hill*, that got 'you ſo much credit, and money too.'—'*Why, 'that's true*, JOHN; *but then* YOU *ſhould remem-'ber alſo the curſed ſcrape you brought me into 'about the young fellow who wrote the threatening 'letters to the farmer, about burning his barns: 'you undertook to prove that too: but you know how 'you left me in the lurch, after I had gone ſuch 'lengths, as had like to have ruined me. Plain 'ſwearing will not always do, though never ſo 'home; you ſhould remember that: you ſhould at-'tend to circumſtances alſo: but, as to this affair, 'let me hear what you can make of it.'

'Your worſhip muſt know, that *I*, and two 'or three more of our people, having nothing to 'do, *ſhammed* a quarrel, in which a gentleman, 'who was coming by, loſt his hat. It was a 'large hat, with a very broad gold lace, ſuch 'as your foreigners wear; it was I that ſhoved 'off the hat, and ſeeing a ſhabby, idle-look-'ing young fellow ſtanding by, without one, 'I took it up, and, aſking him if it was his, 'reached it to him, and ſaw him make off with 'it directly. Now, if this is not a plain robbe-'ry, I do not know what is! a fellow runs 'away with a gentleman's hat, who advertiſes 'it, with a reward for taking the thief, whom 'he will proſecute! now I have found out the 'fellow's haunts, for indeed I dogged him, and 'will have himſelf whenever you pleaſe, and 'can clench the proſecution, by ſwearing that I

'ſaw

'saw him carry off the hat; and you know I 'need say no more, nor take any notice who 'gave it him.'

'*Why*, JOHN, *there may be something in this* 'affair. *I like it very well*, JOHN! *and so, clerk,* 'you may enter him on the list for next sessions. *This* 'affair has a good look; *nor is there any thing un-* 'just in it: *for, tho' you gave him the hat, as he* 'knew it was not his own, *and yet carried it off,* 'he is guilty of the theft, *and that is the same as* 'robbery, *in justice, tho' it may not in law; and* 'justice is the thing to go by, *with a safe conscience.* 'And so you may go, JOHN, *I will let you know* 'when it is proper to have him taken up, *only have* 'an eye to him, *for fear any one else should snap him* 'out of our hands.—*Who comes next!* RICHARD 'SLY, *you say you have found out the knot of* 'young fellows that have begun to infest the streets 'for some nights past.'—'Aye, please your wor-'ship (says *Sly*, shrugging up his shoulders, 'and grinning) I have found them out, to be 'sure; and well I might; for it was I first set 'them on the *lay*.'——'*How*, RICHARD! *take* 'care of what you say.'——'Oh, your wor-'ship, never fear *Dick Sly* for a slippery trick! 'I know what I say very well: I have known 'for some time that these youths have been 'playing a small game, cribbing from the *till*, 'and building *sconces*, and such-like tricks, that 'there was no taking hold of; I therefore 'thought it would be right to bring them to 'justice, at any rate, and so laid the plan of 'this gang, and entered them into the business 'myself, and now, whenever you have a mind 'to *nub* them, you need only take me up, and 'I can *peach* them all, which will be no bad af-

'fair,

'fair, there are ſo many of them.'——'*Why*, '*that is true*, RICHARD; *but they have done no-*'*thing yet that deſerves ſo ſevere a remedy as the* '*gallows! therefore let them alone; perhaps they* '*may mend: or, if they do not, it will be time* '*enough to take them up when they deſerve it more* '*than now To be ſure, your preaching them, who* '*firſt drew them in, is not ſo very juſt; but then* '*the law will ſupport you in it, and, while a man* '*has the law on his ſide, he may laugh at the gal-*'*lows. And ſo*, RICHARD, *have a good look-out* '*till theſe youths are ripe for* TYBURN, *and then* '*your harveſt will come!*'

It would be endleſs to go through this whole buſineſs particularly. Be it ſufficient to ſay, that there was no breach of the laws, which ſome of his people did not give him an information of, and almoſt all, as accomplices, while his whole care was to conſider, which could turn moſt to his advantage, in the conviction, and to ſettle the evidence againſt them, ſo as it might be ſure not to miſcarry.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. IX.

A highwayman, improperly taken, saves his life, by losing his reason. Judicial sagacity, and eloquence triumphant over common-sense, and matter of fact. This mystery explained.

WHILE he was in the midst of this business, he was surprized with the news of an highwayman, that moment brought in by a gentleman who had taken him, in the very attempt of robbing him on *Turnham Green*. This threw the whole house into an uproar.—'*An highwayman taken, and by the very party!* (exclaimed the justice in an agony of rage and vexation) *This is most unfortunate; there is* 40 l. *dead loss, besides the shame of it: how shall I support my consequence, if other people can serve the public without my assistance?*'

'I wonder who it can be (said the clerk) I suppose the man on the white mare, or the mask, from *Putney Common!* but, whoever it is, something must be done! *He* must be saved this time, to save *our* credit, and we may have him the next ourselves! Here they come: do you keep the gentleman in discourse while I speak to the prisoner, and see how he can *come down*. I shall readily give you your *cue*.'

Just then entered the gentleman with his prisoner, whom they directly knew to be an old offender, who had long baffled their pursuit: a cir-

Digitized by Google

a circumſtance, that heightened the vexation of his being taken by another, and was not a little favourable to him at this time.

His worſhip received the gentleman moſt politely, and deſired him to ſit down a moment, till he ſhould finiſh a letter he was writing to *the ſecretary of ſtate*, and then he would attend to his buſineſs, ordering the priſoner to be removed into another room for the mean time.

He then ſat himſelf down to write with great deliberation, and had *juſt finiſhed*, when his clerk came to deliver him a letter *from the lord mayor*, which he read over attentively, and ſaying it was very well, he then turned to the gentleman, and, aſking his pardon for making him wait ſo long, ordered the priſoner to be brought in.

The highwayman appeared now a quite different perſon from what he did, when he was in the room a few minutes before; his looks, which were then clouded with the gloom of liſtleſs dejection and deſpair, being inflamed into the fierceſt agitations of phrenzy.

The gentleman ſhewed his ſurprize at this change, as did his worſhip his uneaſineſs for his own ſafety, from the fury of ſo outrageous a madman. As ſoon as he was *ſecured*, the juſtice addreſſing himſelf, with the height of judicial ſolemnity, to the proſecutor. 'Pray, Sir (ſaid 'he) will you pleaſe to inform me what you 'have to alledge againſt this unhappy perſon?' ——'Sir (replied the gentleman) all I have 'to ſay, is, that he ſtopped me this after-'noon, upon *Turnham-green*, and, preſenting a 'piſtol at me, bid me deliver my money; but 'being well armed, and having more about me 'than I choſe to loſe, inſtead of my purſe, I

'drew a piſtol too, and, his miſſing fire, I grappled with, and took him on the ſpot, and from thence brought him directly here: that is all I have to ſay, Sir!'

'*And pray, Sir, what did he ſay when you had taken him?*'—'Not a word, Sir, nor has he ſpoke a ſyllable ſince; nor anſwered any one queſtion he has been aſked.'——'*Aye, 'tis ſo, poor gentleman, it is ſo?—And pray, Sir, did he make much reſiſtance when you took him?*'——— The utmoſt he was able; but being better mounted, and much ſtronger than him, I ſoon overpowered him, though not without great danger; for, after I had him down, he drew this knife, and very narrowly miſſed plunging it into my body! You ſee what a cut it made in my coat and waiſtcoat!'—'*Aye, poor man, madneſs is always deſperate: I fear, Sir, you have been too haſty in this affair.*'———'How, Sir, too haſty, to take a man in the very action of highway robbery? I do not underſtand you, Sir!'

'*Sir, I mean that this perſon is no robber, but an unhappy gentleman of family and fortune, who has been for ſome time out of his mind: I have been applied to by his relations more than once, to try to have him apprehended, that he might be confined; and, now he is ſecured, they will take proper care of him, that he ſhall not frighten any body for the future; for I am ſatisfied, Sir, that was all he meant; and that he would not have taken your money, had you offered it to him: I ſuppoſe you ſearched him, when you had overpowered him, poor man, as you juſtly termed it! Pray, Sir, did you find any thing upon him, to make you think he was an highwayman? Any watches! jewels! or dif-*

'*ferent*

Digitized by Google

'*ferent purſes of money? or more money than you* '*might think it probable a perſon of his appearance* '*might commonly carry about him.*'

'No really, Sir, I did not find any thing 'like what you mention! this purſe which 'ſeems to have about thirty or forty guineas 'in it (for I have not reckoned them) was the 'only thing in all his pocket, except the knife 'which he drew on me; his piſtols were open-'ly in his ſaddle, as gentlemen commonly wear 'them.'

'*Very well, and does not his preſent behaviour,* '*and whole conduct in this affair, convince you,* '*that the unhappy man could have no felonious in-*'*tent, in his mad attack upon you? for men, mad* '*as he is, have no intention at all; and, without a* '*felonious intent, there can be no robbery: but I* '*preſume, you may underſtand ſomething of the law* '*yourſelf, Sir?*'

'No, indeed, Sir, I cannot ſay I know any 'more law, than juſt not to wrong any perſon 'nor let them wrong me, if I can help it, as 'far as common-ſenſe will direct me: I thank 'God, I have ſpent my days quietly in the coun-'try, and never had a diſpute with any man in 'my life.'

'*Common-ſenſe, dear Sir! common-ſenſe is a blind* '*guide in matters of law! law and common-ſenſe are* '*quite different things; but as I was ſaying, Sir,* '*where there is no felonious intent, there can be no* '*felony; now robbery is puniſhed only becauſe it is* '*felony, for ſo the indictment muſt be laid;* FELO-'NICE, *Sir,* FELONICE, *or it will not do! The* '*indictment will be quaſhed without that word; and* '*who can charge a man with a felonious intent, who* '*is diſordered in mind, and can have no intention*

at all? 'Tis true, the appearnce was bad, and sufficiently terrifying, to authorize your apprehending him: but, as you suffered neither loſs nor hurt, I cannot ſuppoſe, that a gentleman of your humane appearance would deſire to add to the miſery of his preſent unhappy condition, that of impriſonment till the next ſeſſions, when he muſt be acquitted of courſe, as that would certainly make his madneſs for ever incurable.—Whatever expence you have been at in bringing him here, I will take upon me to reimburſe you out of the money in his purſe, beſide what gratification you pleaſe to require, for your own time and trouble! This, Sir, is what I would recommend to you as a Chriſtian and a gentleman, as you appear to be: but, if you are of another opinion, you muſt only ſwear to your information, and enter into a recognizance of proſecution, while I ſign his MITTIMUS, *and ſend word to his friends, who are people of condition.*

'Indeed, Sir, you judge very rightly of me; I would not aggravate the diſtreſs of any human being! If you know the unhappy man, and that he is under ſo ſevere an affliction, as the loſs of reaſon, I have nothing farther to ſay, than that I am ſorry for his misfortune, and would not for the world be the cauſe of heightening it, as I had no motive for apprehending him, but the duty which I and every member owe the public. I thank Heaven for my own eſcape from him, and do not deſire to make any advantage of it. As to the people who aſſiſted me in bringing him hither, they are ſtill unpaid, and you know beſt how to deal with them: So I leave the whole affair to you, and am Your humble ſervant.'

I have

Digitized by Google

I have not interrupted this account with any notice of the behaviour of the criminal, as it conſiſted only of the moſt outrageous imitation of madneſs, with imprecations and blaſphemies, too horrid for repetition.

As ſoon as the gentleman was gone, and the room cleared of all but the juſtice, his clerk, and the *madman*, who was left bound to keep up the farce, his worſhip thus addreſſed him, 'So, 'Sir, you thought to reign for ever; but you 'ſee what your fates have come to? I ſuppoſe 'you are ſurprized at the pains I have taken to 'bring you through this affair!' 'Not at all, 'Sir (replied the criminal) the bank-note 'for 200l. which I had concealed in the ſleeve 'of my coat, and gave your clerk.'—'How, 'Sir (ſaid the juſtice in a rage) do you pre-'tend to ſay it was upon any ſuch account: 'But you judge of others by yourſelf. How-'ever, I ſhall not ſtand to argue the matter 'with you now; you have eſcaped for this 'time, and may be glad of it; but take care 'for the future! your luck may not always be 'ſo good.'——'*Will your worſhip pleaſe to order 'your people to return my horſe and arms? and I 'hope you will give me my purſe; for life without 'ſomething to ſupport it is no great obligation.*'— 'What, Sir! do you pretend to capitulate? 'your horſe you ſhall have, not that you have 'any right to expect him, but becauſe it would 'not be proper to keep him, after the repre-'ſentation that impoſed upon the fool who 'took you; and here are half a ſcore guineas to 'carry you to ſome place where you are not 'known, and to maintain you till you can get 'into ſome honeſt way of earning your bread.

Digitized by Google

'The reſt is little enought o give the people inſtead of your horſe, and to ſtop their mouths. 'You may ſtay here till the croud is diſperſed, 'when you may go where you pleaſe.'——As there was no remedy, the criminal was forced to ſubmit; nor indeed did he ſeem much diſſatisfied at the heavineſs of his compoſition.

CHAP. X.

An inſtance of his worſhip's exemplary juſtice on a ſhop-lifter. The unfaſhionable compaſſion and generoſity of a ſailor. A diſpute about ſuperiority of ſkill, between his worſhip and his clerk, opens new myſteries in the profeſſion.

IT was now pretty late, and my maſter was juſt retiring to ſupper, pleaſed with having made ſo good a day, when he was ſtopped by more buſineſs. A woman who kept a chandler's ſhop, in the next ſtreet, had dragged before him one of her poor neighbours, whom ſhe had caught in the very fact of ſtealing a pound of cheeſe off her counter, as ſhe was reaching a two-penny loaf from the ſhelf: a crime that was heightened by ingratitude too, as ſhe was giving her the loaf on truſt; the thief having owned to her, that ſhe had not a farthing in the world to pay for it, nor a morſel to give her three ſmall children, who had been faſting the whole day.

Enraged at the heinouſneſs of the crime, and at being kept from ſupper, while the chickens and aſparagus were cooling on the table, his worſhip,

Digitized by Google

worſhip, knitting his brows, and putting on all the magiſtrate, aſked the trembling wretch, with a voice that pierced her ſoul,—'What ſhe had to 'ſay for herſelf, and whether ſhe was guilty of 'the crime laid to her charge, or not.'—

The poor creature almoſt dead with wretchedneſs, want, and fear, threw herſelf at his feet, and pouring out a flood of tears, that for ſome moments choaked her utterance, 'O mercy! 'mercy!' (ſaid ſhe) 'for the love of the ſweet '*Jeſus*, have mercy on a poor wretch: whom 'want alone compelled to this firſt offence, to 'ſave the lives of three poor infants, who are 'this moment periſhing with hunger. Oh! 'ſend and prove the truth of what I ſay; ſend 'and learn their miſery, and it will move you 'to relieve them, and then I care not what be-'comes of me.'—'*Very fine, truly! if we admit ſuch excuſes for ſhop-lifting, there will be enough ready to plead them. Here, make her mittimus; ſhe confeſſes the fact; as for her brats, baſtards too, I ſuppoſe, let them be ſent to the workhouſe.*'—'Oh the poor creatures! they 'are not baſtards; and they have no pariſh to 'be ſent to. My huſband is a ſailor, who was 'preſſed on board a man of war ſix years ago, 'and has been in the *Weſt-Indies* ever ſince, till 'the ſummer, when the ſhip was ordered home 'to be laid up. Poor ſoul! he thought he 'ſhould be paid off, and ſo wrote me word to '*Corke* to come to him, for he meant to go 'and ſettle in *Scotland*, his own country; but, 'the moment he came to *Portſmouth*, he was 'turned over into another ſhip, without getting 'a ſhilling of his ſix years wages or prize-'money, and ſent away directly to *America*;

'so that after spending every penny I had in the 'world, to come to him from *Ireland*, as he de-'sired, I am left here with my poor children to 'starve in a strange place, where nobody has any 'compassion for me, though my husband wrote 'me word, that he had above 300 l. due to him 'for wages and prize-money; here is his letter! 'I never go without it; it is all the comfort I 'have in my distress.'

'*Aye, I thought so! I thought you were one of* 'those Irish *thieves that came to rob us, and cut our* 'throats; *but I shall take care of you! I shall make* 'you wish you had continued eating potatoes at home. 'I wish I could provide as well for every one of your 'country! we shall never be well till we have 'hanged you all.*'—'Oh good your worship! 'I am no thief, I never stole any thing before, 'and this woman, who has brought me before 'you, knows the truth of every thing I have 'told your worship; and that I have always 'paid her honestly while I had a penny in the 'world, for I have dealt with her ever since I 'came to *London*; but hunger, and the cries of 'three starving children, forced me to this! Oh 'my children my children!'—'*Peace, woman! 'all you can say signifies nothing; you were taken 'in the fact, and to* Newgate *you shall go directly. 'And as for your brats, it is better for them to die 'of hunger now, than to live to be hanged like their 'mother.*'——

By this time the *mittimus* was ready, which he signed without the least hesitation or pity, and then hurried away to his supper, having almost fretted his bowels out, to think it was spoiled by waiting so long.

But,

Digitized by Google

But though the juſtice's compaſſion could not be moved by ſuch a *poor* wretch, his clerk was not ſo inexorable, but yielded to the perſuaſion of an honeſt *tar*, who ſeeing a crowd at the door, had given ſixpence to go in, and ſee the *fun*; and for two guineas, *which barely paid his fees*, ventured to make up the affair, and let her go about her buſineſs, *though he did not know what might be the conſequence, if it ſhould come to his worſhip's knowledge.*——*Jack* took no notice of what he ſaid, but taking the poor creature, who was juſt ſinking under the agitations of fear, joy, and gratitude, by the hand, 'Chear away, ſiſter, ſiſter,' (ſaid he) 'chear away; we'll bring up all this lee way, 'next trip. Damn my eyes and limbs if I'll ſee 'a brother ſeaman's family at ſhort allowance, 'while I have a ſhilling! Come, heave a-head; 'I'll rig and victual you and your children, 'againſt your huſband comes, to man you for a 'voyage home. I'll ſwing my hammock in the 'next birth, and you ſhall cook the kettle, while 'I ſtay aſhore.——Saying which words he led her off in triumph.——This the clerk told his worſhip, when he came in to ſupper, giving him one of the guineas, as his ſhare of the compoſition.

I now thoght the buſineſs of the day over, and was preparing to take a view of my new maſter's heart, while he and his clerk were enjoying their ſucceſs over an hearty bottle. But I was prevented by an accident, which diſturbed for a while, and had like to have entirely broken off this harmony between them; a diſpute, like thoſe between all conquerors, ariſing about the diviſion of the ſpoil, and the merit in the acquiſition of it.

Digitized by Google

'This will do,' (said his worship, clapping his hands a-kimbo, after a full glass) 'this will 'do! what between the bawd in the morning 'and the highwayman in the afternoon, we have 'made a noble day of it! But what have you 'ordered about that fellow? I hope you have 'taken care that we may have him ourselves 'next.' 'Never fear,' (replied the clerk) 'I 'have done for him. I have sent people to *lay* 'all the roads he can go, from the inn where he 'ordered his horse; and *plausible Tom* is fixed 'there, to scrape an acquaintance with him, 'so that he cannot escape.'

'*Aye, let* Tom *alone to manage him; many a* 'cunning *fellow's heart has that* Tom *crept into,* 'till he had weedled him to Tyburn! *Not a law-* 'y*r of them all has a smoother tongue But did not* 'I *improve the hint of his madness well? how quietly* 'the gudgeon *swallowed it! if I were to set about* 'it, *I believe in my soul, I could have persuaded him* 'out of his own *senses, and made him think himself* 'mad, *as well as the highwayman! ha! ha! ha!* 'though *you were not quite clear enough in your* 'note; *you should have told me all the particulars;* 'I *was often at a loss; but upon the whole, I think* 'I *did pretty well; pretty well I think!*'

'Why aye, you did so manage it pretty well 'when I had given you the *cue*, and so might 'any one have done. But how would you have 'contrived to bring him off, if I had not made 'that hit!'—'*How!—why easily enough!*—— '*I would have——But what have you done with* 'the *bank-note! let me see that!*'—'The note! 'it is safe enough. But you do not tell me, 'how would you have managed to have earned 'it; I think you should do that before you

'ask

'ask for it.—'*How I would have earned it? why pray, good Sir, do you know whom you talk to in this manner?*'—'Whom I talk to? ——I talk to the worshipful justice——whose betters I have talked to before now; and who would not have asked me that question some years ago, when he applied to me to instruct him in the business of his office!'——'*Insolence! instruct me! I'll make you know, Sir, that I understand my business without your instruction! I'll take another clerk to-morrow.*'—'With all my heart, good master justice, with all my heart; and see who will be the loser by that. If you do not know it yet, you will soon see then, whether the business comes to the justice or his clerk; for I give you notice, that I shall take all the *people* with me; you shall have the credit of making up a new *set* for yourself, I assure you.'——'*Very fine, very fine treatment this!*'——'Why do you deserve it then, Sir, if you do not like it? I say very fine treatment too! that you should take upon you to undervalue my skill, and assume the credit of it to yourself; you, whom I first taught, and still support in your office, in despite of all your blunders!——As for the bank note, here it is, and here it shall be, till we have settled the account of the last sessions, when you were so clever upon me, sending me on a fool's errand out of the way, while you took up the reward. Perhaps you thought I did not see through your design, or that I was afraid to speak of it, but you were quite mistaken; I only waited till the remedy should come into my own hands, and now it has, be assured I shall

'make

Digitized by Google

'make uſe of it, whatever you may think, Sir? 'and farther let me tell you, that if you ſay 'much more, I will think of parting in earneſt, 'if you do not think proper to come to a new 'agreement; for I ſee no reaſon why you ſhould 'carry off two thirds of the profit only becauſe 'you are *juſtice* indeed, though I do all the buſi-'neſs!'——

CHAP. XI.

The breach happily made up by the arrival of company. The evening concluded in character. His worſhip goes next morning to hear a charity ſermon, and from thence to eat a charity feaſt, where CHRYSAL *enters into a new ſervice. Some account of the nature of a charity feaſt.*

MATTERS were now at ſuch an height, that I every minute expected they would have proceeded from words to blows, when a pull at the bell brought them both to themſelves in an inſtant.

'Ah! that is true! this is quarter-night,' (ſaid the juſtice) 'and here the ladies are come! 'Give me your hand: why ſhould we fall out 'about our ſkill, when the buſineſs goes on 'well? here's my ſervice to you; and let there 'be no more of it.'——

'With all my heart (replied the clerk) but 'why will you urge me on thus, when you know 'that I cannot bear to have my ſkill called in 'queſtion.'

By

Digitized by Google

By this time the ladies entered, whom I directly saw to be the *commode* matrons, and compliant fair, of his district, who came duly to compound with him, for the breach of those laws he was appointed to support.

The very mention of this scene sufficiently explains the nature of it, and makes a more particular description unnecessary. All parties behaved properly on the occasion. *They* paid their subsidies, for which he returned them very wholesome advice, to behave with diligence and discretion in their professions; and especially those who lived in his neighbourhood, he cautioned to avoid all riots, and causes of offence, which might bring his connivance and protection into suspicion; then relaxing from the severity of his morals, he gave up the rest of the night, and a good part of the next morning, to mirth and good-fellowship, in the company of a few of his particular favourites, and best customers of this motly set, having dismissed the rest to the pursuit of their occupations.

The business of the day, and pleasures of the night, had so far exhausted his spirits, that nature required a long pause: accordingly, no business coming in to disturb him (for such was his vigilance in his office, and care for the public, that every thing gave way to that) he made a late morning, not waking till he was called to attend a sermon and dinner, which were to be that day, for the benefit of a charity, to which he was a constant benefactor; as indeed his public spirit made him, to all that were already established, and prompted him to strike out many new; in which, as the author of them, he hoped to have the

the management, while novelty ſhould make it the faſhion to ſupport them.

But in this he was always diſappointed. For though, in the multitude of his ſchemes, he ſometimes ſtumbled upon a good one, yet his head was ſo confuſed, and his notions ſo wild and immethodical, that before he could digeſt his plans into any regularity, ſome one elſe took up the hint, and ran away with the credit of the deſign.

At church he *edified* greatly, by a comfortable *nap*, during the ſermon, which finiſhed his refreſhment, and ſent him with a clear head, and keen ſtomach, to the feaſt, where every perſon ſeemed to vie, in demonſtrating his attachment to the cauſe of their meeting, by the quantity he eat and drank.

I here changed my ſervice once more, being given by his worſhip in the ſubſcription, and ſo came into the poſſeſſion of a community in general, which gave me an opportunity of ſeeing the human heart in a more complicated view, than perhaps any other ſcene of its actions could afford; as there was hardly a profeſſion, degree, or rank of life, which had not a repreſentative in this meeting, nor a motive of action, however apparently contrary to its deſign, or contradictory to each other, which did not contribute its influence to the bringing them together.

While I lay in the hands of the treaſurer of the charity, unaſſigned to any particular uſe, or perſon, I enjoyed a ſtate of liberty; ſomething like that of living in a commonwealth, having it in my power to enter into the hearts of all the governors (who were now my owners) as I liked and to make any obſervations, without reſtraint to any particular perſon, time, or place.

Charity

Charity is a moſt amiable and moſt exalted of the human virtues, and that which riſes to the neareſt imitation of the divine. Nor can any thing be a ſtronger proof of the beneficence of the author of the human nature, than his placing this virtue, which is the perfection of it, within the reach of every individual.

For charity is a diſpoſition to think well of, and do well to every other human being, without partiality, prejudice, or reſpect to any other motive, than this univerſal duty; giving of alms being no more than one, and that perhaps the very meaneſt effect of it.

But this extenſiveneſs of the nature of charity is the reaſon of its being generally miſconceived, and moſt erroneouſly confined to this effect by minds unable to comprehend its greater excellence; and, from this miſtake, have proceeded many of the extraordinary inſtances of this effect of charity, which diſtinguiſhes the preſent age.

This is a moſt dangerous error; it is too like thinking to bribe Heaven with the wages of Hell; and yet, profanely abſurd as ſuch a notion is, daily obſervation ſhews the extenſive prevalence of it.

A charity is ſuch a refined and exalted virtue, and purely ſpiritual, it muſt appear ſtrange to you how it ſhould enter into the head of man, to make ſo groſs, dull, and ſenſual a paſſion, as eating the foundation of it! Indeed ſo unnatural is the thought to pure ſpeculation, unacquainted with the perverſions of life, that a charity feaſt, in the literal meaning of the phraſe, muſt be taken for a meeting of the poor, to eat the proviſions ſupplied for them by the rich, inſtead of the rich meeting to gorge their own appetites.

But

Digitized by Google

But a little obſervation of the preſent bias of the world will ſolve this difficulty. Of all the *natural* appetites and paſſions, which poſſeſs that part of mankind, whoſe age has enabled them to amaſs money enough to give away, eating is the moſt univerſal. I ſay natural paſſions, for fraud, avarice, or ambition, or even luſt, at the time of life, are not the paſſions of nature.

To gratify this therefore, was the moſt probable ſcheme for drawing them together: and, when that is ſufficiently done, the full heart opens eaſily, and ſhares its abundance with the empty.

CHAP. XII.

A repreſentation of the company. The hiſtory of one of the principal members. The modern method of bribing Heaven with the wages of Hell.

*THEY had feaſted, nor did their minds yet require ſuch another banquet**, when I became a member of their ſociety; you muſt not expect a particular account or deſcription of ſuch a ſcene. A few general hints muſt ſatisfy your curioſity, as I have told you on other occaſions.

Let your imagination repreſent to you a number of people, whoſe higheſt pleaſure is eating, ſeated at a large table, covered with all the delicacies, all the rarities of the ſeaſon, in a plenty that promiſed ſatiety to the keeneſt appetites.—But I muſt ſtop! I ſee the very thought has an effect upon you, that ſavours too ſtrongly of ſenſuality,

* Homer.

Digitized by Google

ſuality, and might, if not checked, put a ſtop to our converſation, by ſome human hankerings. Let us therefore paſs over ſuch a ſcene, and turn our obſervation to the company, as they ſat, after the fragments of the feaſt were removed. And here it will be proper to have recourſe to the expedient we made uſe of before, and, holding up the mirror to imagination, view the whole ſcene as if actually preſent.

Obſerve, then, that enormous bulk of fleſh, that ſits at the head of the table, with his waiſtcoat all unbuttoned, and gaſping for breath; the diſtenſion of his ſtomach having left his lungs ſcarce room to perform the animal functions, and fat almoſt choaked the paſſages of vital air.

He is one of the principal ſupporters of this, and every other public charity, founded on the modern method of a feaſt; the natural avarice of his heart outwitting itſelf in this inſtance; for as he is ſure of ſatiating his appetites with more and better victuals and wine, at theſe meetings, than he could have at home, for much more than the price of the ticket, the advantage of that bargain always tempts him to go; and then the happineſs of his heart, in the fulneſs of his ſtomach, opens his purſe, and he ſubſcribes with a liberality that ariſes almoſt to profuſion.

But look into his heart, and read the reſt of his life: the very money which he beſtows with ſuch an appearance of virtue, on this beſt of uſes (for no error in motive, or manner, muſt take off the merit of an action that does good) this very money (I ſay) has perhaps been acquired by vices the moſt oppoſite to the virtues it is applied to.

The

The greateſt frugality, application, and ſkill in the myſterious buſineſs of a ſcrivener, have raiſed this perſon, from the moſt abject poverty, to affluence, above the moderation of a rational wiſh. But ſo powerful is the force of habit, that, though the cauſe has been long ſince removed, the effect ſtill remains, and he perſiſts to ſave and heap up money, by all the mean and iniquitous ways which want firſt ſuggeſted to him. One inſtance, and that not ſingular in him, will give you a ſufficient inſight into his character.

A gentleman whom indiſcretion and indolence of temper had involved in ſome pecuniary diſtreſſes, had the greater misfortunes, ſome years ago, to be recommended to this perſon, to borrow ſuch a ſum of money as ſhould extricate him from his immediate difficulties, on a mortgage of his eſtate.

As his ſecurity was good, his buſineſs was ſoon done; but the convenience of his eſtate to another which the perſon had lately purchaſed in his neighbourhood, and an acquaintance with the unwary eaſineſs of his diſpoſition, made him caſt a wiſhful eye upon it, and form ſchemes for getting it abſolutely into his poſſeſſion.

At firſt he ſtrove to tempt his indiſcretion by the offer of more money to ſupply his pleaſures; but finding that would not take, and that the ſenſe of his former extravagances dwelt ſo ſtrongly on him, as to give his mind a kind of turn to induſtry, did he know how to apply it, his ready genius ſtruck out a method, that he imagined could not fail of ſucceſs.

He therefore cultivated an intimacy with the gentleman, in which, upon all occaſions, he affected

fected to boaſt of his own ſucceſs in life, and to attribute it to his having always a command of money, to take the advantage of any bargain that might offer.

As this turn of converſation ſeemed to flow only from the fulneſs of his heart, and to be free from all deſign, it had the effect he propoſed, and raiſed a deſire in his friend to follow a method which had been ſo ſucceſsful with him. He therefore, one day, communicated to him a reſolution which he had formed of ſelling his eſtate, and applying the money to buſineſs; and deſired his friend's aſſiſtance to execute his deſign. After an appearance of ſurpriſe, the ſcrivener teſtified his pleaſure and approbation of his prudence, by the readineſs with which he undertook to ſerve him.

The eaſe with which the firſt part of his ſcheme had ſucceeded, made him form further hopes, and think of getting the eſtate he deſired, even at a cheaper rate than purchaſing it.

After ſome time ſpent, as he ſaid, in fruitleſs enquiries for a purchaſer, he moſt artfully drew his friend to deſire that he would buy it himſelf: at firſt he ſeemed to heſitate, but then, as it were yielding to the impulſe of his friendſhip, he concluded a bargain for it, on terms evidently advantageous to the ſeller.

All things being agreed upon, the parties met to conclude the affair, when the writings being read over, and the money lying on the table, while the ſcrivener told it, the gentleman executed the deeds of conveyance, and receipt, before proper witneſſes, who withdrew as ſoon as they had ſigned them.

In

Digitized by Google

In the mean time the ſcrivener continued to tell the money, till a ſervant entered haſtily with a letter, as from a lord, who was one of his beſt clients, and deſired to ſee him that moment. The difficulty this threw him into was ſoon ſolved, by his friend's compliance to defer his buſineſs for a few hours, as the lord's urgency would not admit the leaſt delay. Accordingly, he put up both the deeds and money in all the apparent confuſion of hurry, and went away to his lordſhip.

Next morning the gentleman called to receive the price of his eſtate, but his friend was not at home, nor to be ſpoken with in the afternoon, for his turn was now ſerved, and he neither deſired, nor perhaps thought it ſafe, to keep up any farther acquaintance with him.

As ſuch things might happen to a man in buſineſs, the gentleman took no notice of them, but quietly ſwallowed the ſame excuſes for ſome days ſucceſſively. At length his patience began to be exhauſted, and his fears alarmed at a behaviour ſo ſtrange, and contrary to that height of intimacy that had been between them, even were there no buſineſs in the caſe.——In this perplexity he went one morning, reſolved not to quit the houſe till he ſhould ſee him, and when a meſſage to that purpoſe was, after long attendance, complied with, upon a warm expoſtulation, he received for anſwer, from his *friend*, that, 'He had been of late too much 'engaged in affairs of conſequence to attend 'compliments, and knew not any buſineſs he 'could have with him.'

'Not know my buſineſs, Sir (replied the gentleman in aſtoniſhment) I come, Sir, for my 'money,

'money, and ſhall hereafter never trouble you 'more with buſineſs, or compliment.'—'*Your 'money, Sir! I do not underſtand you: Pray, Sir, 'what money do you mean?*'—'What money! 'the purchaſe money of my eſtate, Sir; which 'you were to have paid me above a week ago, 'when I ſigned the deeds of ſale.'———'*Poor 'Gentleman; it is ſo! as I was informed, and 'always feared. He has loſt his reaſon; and I 'ſhould not ſeem much better, to truſt myſelf longer 'with a man in his condition.*'—'Take care, Sir, 'this is too tender a point to be trifled with: you 'almoſt make me mad!'—'*Aye, there it is: 'he is mad, poor man: and is even ſenſible of it 'himſelf!*'—'Death, Sir, do not dare to dally 'with me a moment longer! anſwer me di-'rectly! pay me my money! and do not really 'provoke me to a madneſs that may be fatal to 'us both.'——'*Sir, your madneſs, or reaſon, is 'nothing to me: however, I will anſwer you direct-'ly, that I owe you no money, and none will I pay 'you. As for the purchaſe money of your eſtate, your 'parting with which I ſee has turned your brain, 'when you come to yourſelf, you will recollect that I 'paid it to you when I executed the deeds of ſale; 'or if you do not remember it, your own receipt, pro-'perly witneſſed, will prove it for me, and I de-'ſire no more: and therefore, Sir, let me have no 'further trouble with you, if you do not chuſe to 'take up your lodgings in* MOORFIELDS.'

'This is too much; juſt heaven! this is too 'much: too much for human patience to en-'dure! or wait the law's delay for remedy! I 'will avenge myſelf, aſſert the cauſe of juſtice, 'and rid the groaning world of ſuch a monſter!' (exclaimed the unhappy gentleman) now really irritated

irritated into the extremity of that phrenzy which the other only wanted to impose upon him, and drawing his sword, before the wretch could call for help, or take any method of defence, he plunged it through his body.

His shrieks soon alarmed his servants, who, rushing in, found him weltering in his blood, and the madman smiling, in the absence of frantic extasy, over him, and incapable of attention to any other circumstance, though some of them dragged him before a magistrate, while the rest were busied in procuring relief for their master.

The madman was committed to prison, to wait the event of the wound he had given, which Heaven, to let the measure of the scrivener's iniquity be full, had directed to a part where it was not mortal.

In a word, he recovered, though not to a sense of justice or humanity, but persisting in his iniquity, which now was sharpened by a spirit of revenge, for what he had endured, the first effort of his health, was to have the unhappy sufferer confined in *Bedlam*, where he still languishes under all the horrors that attend a total loss of reason, without relief, or even compassion, from his base undoer; who, this very morning, as he was stepping into his chariot, to come to this *charity feast*, spurned from him with his foot, and refused the smallest alms to the wretched wife of the ruined madman, who begs in the common streets, and was driven, by misery and despair, to throw herself even at his feet, to implore relief.

I see your abhorrence rise at such a monster, but how will wonder even heighten it, when I tell you, that this oppressor has neither child, nor kinsman to inherit his wealth: for he was himself

himself a foundling, and reared at the public expence, without the knowledge or tenderness of a parent, to soften his rugged soul; nor would the selfishness of his heart ever permit him to marry, for fear of the expence of a family; but he is this moment meditating on some ostentatious scheme of charity, to the foundation of which, he designs to dedicate the wealth which he has amassed by such villanies.

CHAP. XIII.

Continued: The history of a general almoner. His method of making charity begin at home. He converts a noted bawd, but disappoints his designs, by too great confidence in his own skill. The character of a clergyman.

MOVE your eye to the left, and view that demure-looking picture of devotion, who sits there in silence, lifting up his eyes to Heaven, and sighing in spirit, at the festivity and sensual conversation round him.

Who, that can see no deeper than outward appearances, would not think that man sincere in his professions of religion and virtue? whereas, in truth, he is the most abandoned contemner of both; and deepens the dye of his blackest crimes by the most hardened hypocrisy, secretly living on the practice of those very vices, of which he professes the greatest abhorrence.

With all that consequence, which he assumes in the direction of this charity, on the merit of the largeness of his subscription to it, in reality, he

Digitized by Google

he is but the diſpenſer of other people's benefactions, into whoſe good opinion he ſo inſinuates himſelf, by his pretended piety, that they intruſt their charity to his diſpoſal, who always pays himſelf for his trouble, by ſubducting largely, from the ſums confided to him. For, as real charity vaunteth not itſelf, they never divulge the ſecret, completely impoſed on by his addreſs, that never lets one half of his contributors know of the other; by which management, as the ſums he gives are always made public, for example and imitation, each thinks that *he* adds moſt liberally to his own donation.———But this is not the only method by which he turns his piety to advantage. The acceſs which the reputation of it gains him in almoſt every family, opens him an opportunity of carrying on the deepeſt intrigues, and becoming a pander, for vices both natural and unnatural, which the intereſt of the parties concerned makes them ſtill keep ſecret.—As for the former, the myſtery of that trade has been in part explained already; and the latter is too horrible for explanation. I ſhall therefore paſs over thoſe ſcenes, and conclude my account of this extraordinary perſonage, with one inſtance of his addreſs, in finding out and managing the weak ſide of ſuperſtition and vice.

In the courſe of his love negotiations, he had made an acquaintance with a woman who kept a public *bagnio*, or houſe of proſtitution, which acquaintance mutual intereſt cemented into an intimacy. In this moſt infamous trade had this woman amaſſed conſiderable wealth, the diſpoſal of which (after her death) took up much of her thoughts, in thoſe moments, when the conſequences

Digitized by Google

quences of her debauched life forced her to think of dying.

As the secrets of their trade had removed every reserve from between them, she often used to consult him on this head; when he always comforted her with dissertations upon religion and virtue, *stripping them of the vain incumbrances of priestcraft, and bringing them back to their genuine principles of benevolence and charity.*

Frequent inculcation of this doctrine had the effect he designed; the matron was pleased with the thought of having all the benefit of religion, without the trouble of the practice, and immediately began to exercise her donations to public charities, which, as it was not quite so much in character for her to offer in person, while she continued her profession, and she saw no necessity, nor felt inclination to quit that, she always confided to the distribution of her spiritual guide.

Nor did his success stop here; he improved his influence on her superstition so far, that he prevailed on her to compound with Heaven for the vices of her life, by bequeathing the earnings of them to its use, after her death.

For this purpose he himself drew her will, which pious application of her fortune, set her conscience at ease; and she continued her usual business to the hour of her death, which happened three years after, with such care and industry, that some instance of negligence in one of her servants administring to the pleasure of her guests, gave her such uneasiness in her last moments, that, with her dying breath, she lamented the ruin her house must come to, after she should quit the care of it, for the joys of Heaven.

Digitized by Google

You muſt not think that his deſign extended no farther, than to prevail on her to make ſuch a will; he had drawn it himſelf, as I have told you, and took care to word it in ſuch a manner, as he thought ſhould give him, under the appearance of her executor and truſtee, as ſhe deſigned him, a real property in her wealth; as it was immediately to come into his hands, on her death, and there was no time appointed for the fulfilling her pious intentions.

But here his ſagacity diſappointed itſelf: for neglecting to take proper advice, or afraid of making any perſon privy to his deſigns, he had committed ſuch *material* errors in the *form* of the will, as gave room to learned counſel to ſet it aſide, in favour of the heir at law, her nephew, who, from cleaning ſhoes under a gateway, was enriched with at leaſt a third part of his aunt's fortune, which remained to him, after the coſts of the ſuit that had been carried on for him, *in formâ pauperis*, while her executor had the vexation of diſappointment aggravated by a decree *to pay all the coſt*.—This was a ſevere ſtroke: but it did not break his ſpirit, though it obliged him to return to his former occupation of an *almoner*, which you ſee he purſues with that attention which always inſures ſucceſs.

'I ſee you ſink under the pain of finding the beſt actions debaſed, by ſpringing from ſuch motives; but be careful to avoid an error, fatally too prevalent, of concluding from the abuſe, againſt the uſe of any thing that may, in its end, be conducive to good.

Theſe inſtances I have given; and I could add many more; not to depreciate the cuſtom of

of giving to public charities, which is the nobleſt uſe of wealth; but to caution you againſt the dangerous error of thinking, that ſuch giving alone, without reformation of life, and the active practice of the other virtues, can be acceptable in the ſight of him to whom it is offered, or efficacious to procure his favour: and to ſhew the abſurd impiety of perſiſting in vice, with a vain hope of bribing Heaven with the wages of Hell.

But to relieve your pain, behold that venerable perſon who ſits oppoſite to him; the ſerenity of whoſe looks ſhews the happineſs of his mind. Read his heart, and you will not find one diſcontent, or ſorrow there, but what humanity imprints for the diſtreſſes of his fellow-creatures, which his beneficence, his real charity, is for over finding methods to relieve, not only by pecuniary benefactions, though to theſe is devoted the far greater part of his ample fortune, but alſo by his advice, inſtruction and good offices, the judicious application and ſincerity of which makes them very rarely fail of ſucceſs.—He is a real ſupporter of charity, in its moſt extenſive ſenſe! his example giving a ſanction, a ſeal of virtue, to every thing he appears in, which puts wicked wit out of countenance, and ſtops the tongue of calumny; and is (even were it alone) ſufficient to counterbalance, all the inſtances which could be brought againſt it. His long life, which has been extended by Heaven, as a bleſſing to mankind, has been a conſtant illuſtration of the religion he teaches; not one inſtance of his actions ever contradicting his profeſſion, as near as human weakneſs can act up to divine perfection.

Digitized by Google

Such is the clergyman! such should all clergymen be, to preserve the purity, the dignity of a function, whose rules are drawn from perfection, and calculated to prepare the human for a participation of the divine nature; to accomplish which greatest end, all profession, not inforced by practice, must be ineffectual.

To mention any one instance of his good works would be doing injustice to the rest, and contradicting the desire of his heart, which next to doing good, is to conceal what he does, his actions being so far from ostentation, that to Heaven only, and the parties themselves, are they revealed; nor to these even is the hand that reaches them the blessing always known.

CHAP. XIV.

Continued: The history of a bear-leader. His method of making his pupil's masters earn their money. The general consequence of close friendships between the different sexes. He modestly offers his pupil's mother a nut almost too hard for her liquorish tooth: but she swallows it whole, to save the trouble of mumbling, and meets a just return for her untimely passion.

OPPOSITE to him, you see a man, whose rich dress and supercilious carriage give him the appearance of a superiority over all the rest of the company; but such artifices impose only upon the ignorant and vulgar; to a judicious eye they aggravate the defects they are meant to disguise; and the low-bred avaricious wretch

wretch appears doubly contemptible, through the unnatural veil of pride and munificence.

There is ſomething ſo whimſically ſingular in the ſtory of this perſon, that I will gratify your curioſity with a ſhort ſketch of it.

He was born in the loweſt claſs of the people, in a poor village, in one of the moſt remote parts of the kingdom; but the delicacy of his conſtitution making him unfit for a life of labour, the common lot of his condition, his poor parents denied themſelves almoſt the neceſſaries of life to ſend him to ſchool, to qualify him for ſome employment better ſuited to his natural imbecillity. The maſter of the ſchool, who was a perſon of diſcernment and good nature, ſoon perceived that the weakneſs of his body was amply made up by the abilities of his mind, and took a pleaſure in giving inſtruction which he ſaw received with advantage. Nor did he ſtop here; but, when his pupil had made the ordinary progreſs of the ſchool, he uſed the perſuaſive argument of teaching him for nothing, and even ſupplying him with books at his own expence, to prevail upon his parents to let him purſue his ſtudies.

When he had advanced by this aſſiſtance, conſiderably beyond the uſual boundaries of ſchool-education, being not only critically ſkilled in the learned languages, but alſo well grounded in the principles of the liberal ſciences, his kind maſter crowned the benefits he had conferred upon him, by recommending him warmly to a widow lady, of large fortune, to educate her only ſon, whom female fondneſs would not permit her to truſt out of her ſight at a publick ſchool.

In this employment he behaved himself with such circumspection and care (for the weakness of his constitution saved him from all danger of excess, and the horrors of returning to his former poverty and distress, fixed his attention, invariably, to every possible means of advancing his fortune) that he won the confidence of his pupil's mother so far, that she ventured to send her darling son to the university in his care; and when he had finished his studies there, with credit gave him a genteel stipend, to accompany him in his travels to the different courts of Europe, to complete an education so happily begun, and enable him to make a figure in life, suitable to the affluence of his fortune.

The unbounded confidence with which this trust was committed to him, gave him sufficient opportunities of gratifying the ruling passions of his heart, vanity and avarice, as it enabled him to secrete, to his own use, as much as he pleased of his pupil's fortune, satisfied that his accounts would never be examined; and to acquire, late as it was, the ornamental parts of education, which his original poverty, and the necessary gravity of his literary life and employment had precluded him from.

Accordingly, as soon as he arrived in *Paris*, the first place where he designed to make any delay, he suffered himself to be prevailed upon by his pupil, to remit something of the strictness of his authority, and, seemingly, winked at his plunging into all the levities and excesses of unguarded youth, that he might have the more convenient opportunity for executing his own schemes. Thus, while his abused charge threw away the time he ought to have spent in receiving

Digitized by Google

ing profitable information and improvement, in idle expence and vicious pleaſures, the prudent tutor took the advantage of his abſence, to attend the maſters he retained for him, and learn dancing, fencing, muſic, and all the other accompliſhments of polite education; a conduct which he carefully obſerved, in all the different ſtages of their travels. But ſtill his labour, as you ſee, was for the moſt part, in vain, the ruſt of his mean original being too ſtrongly confirmed, to be worn off by ſo late application, ſo that his aukward affectation only makes defects, which would otherwiſe have paſſed unnoticed, become more viſible, and expoſes him to contempt and ridicule.

But, eager as he was in theſe favourite purſuits, he did not let them divert his attention from the main point, of continuing to cultivate the good opinion and confidence of his pupil's mother, to whom he conſtantly wrote in ſuch a ſtrain of piety, and gave ſuch pleaſing accounts of her ſon's conduct, expatiating on his good qualities, and palliating his failings, with the tender ſtiles of youthful levity, and the frailty of nature (for fear ſhe ſhould receive information of his exceſſes from any other perſon) that ſhe thought herſelf happy in having placed him under a man of ſuch virtue and goodneſs; her opinion of which was not a little heightened by the care he took of his parents, to whom he conſtantly remitted, through her hands, ſuch a portion of his ſtipend, as enabled them to live with comfort; and with his former maſter he kept up a regular correſpondence, informing him of every thing he ſaw in his travels, that he thought would be agreeable and entertaining to him, and expreſſing his grati-

Digitized by Google

tude for the friendſhip which had advanced him ſo happily in life.

When his pupil had finiſhed his travels in this manner, they returned home, where the fond mother received them with the higheſt joy, her eſteem for the tutor almoſt equalling her love for her ſon. But this natural affection did not long maintain the pre-eminence! Her eſtabliſhed opinion of the underſtanding, learning, and virtue of the former, levelled the height from which difference of condition had made her look down upon him before, and ſhe admitted him into all the intimacy of friendſhip. There is nothing more deceitful than connections of this kind between the different ſexes. Let them be formed with whatever reſolutions they will, at firſt, nature will inſenſibly take the alarm, and force the execution of her moſt powerful laws.

This intimacy had not been long cultivated, before the lady began to ſee perfections in her new friend, which ſhe had never perceived before, and to feel a pleaſure in his converſation which her heart had long been a ſtranger to. She knew not how it was, but nothing pleaſed her except what he ſaid, or did: Even her fondneſs for her ſon began to cool, and her eyes to open to faults in him, which ſhe had always been blind to before, though he had never taken any pains to conceal them from her. This did not eſcape the penetration of her friend a moment, nor was his judgment at a loſs how to improve it to the beſt advantage. He immediately began to aſſume a timid tenderneſs in his looks and manner, and took every occaſion of diſplaying the genteel accompliſhments he had acquired in his tra-

travels, while her unhappy ſon, as if he had entered into the ſcheme againſt himſelf, ſeldom came near her, and when he did, behaved with a careleſs indifference, ſcarce ſhort of rudeneſs and inſult.

Such a contraſt was too ſtriking to paſs unnoticed: nor did her friend fail to aggravate the impreſſions of it, by doubling his aſſiduity and tender complaiſance, whenever his former pupil withdrew, and lamenting the unhappy turn he had taken, in terms of the deepeſt concern, but without ever offering a word in his excuſe.

This ſubtle conduct had the deſired effect: The love of the mother was entirely diverted from her ſon to her friend; and as the fooliſh fondneſs of her deceaſed huſband had left much the greater part of his large fortune in her power, the improvement of this change was an object worthy of his higheſt attention. But ſtill the difficulty upon both was, how to open the affair; for, powerful as the different motives that urged them to bring it to a concluſion were, a ſenſe of the impropriety of ſuch an action, made them equally at a loſs how to mention it.

But here again the evil genius of the ſon prevailed, and he did that for them which they knew not how to do themſelves. For ſome of his friends obſerving the intimacy between his mother and his former tutor, deſired him to be upon his guard, and ſtrive to prevent the conſequences of it, by a change in his behaviour to her. Such prudent advice, if properly followed, might probably have had effect. But inſtead of that, he flew immediately to his mother, and indiſcreetly charged her with a deſign of betraying the confidence of his father, and ruining him, to gratify a ridiculous paſſion for a mean unworthy

Digitized by Google

object; and then turning to him, who happened to be preſent, he told him fiercely, that, if he did not that inſtant quit his mother's houſe, he would treat him as the villainy of ſuch a deſign deſerved, in the next place he ſhould ever meet him; and ſo flung out of the room in the higheſt rage, leaving them ſtaring at each other, and almoſt petrified with aſtoniſhment.

But a few moments reſtored them to themſelves! the affair was now revealed, and ſo the greateſt difficulty over. 'I wiſh (ſaid the tutor, as if he 'ſpoke to his former pupil, though he took care 'to wait till he heard him out of the houſe) I 'wiſh no other perſon beſide *me* had reaſon to 'fear your reſentment; or that I had no other 'obſtacle but that, to prevent the happineſs my 'heart languiſhes for.'——And then turning to the lady, as if he did not know that ſhe had heard what he had ſaid, 'I am moſt unhappy, madam '(proceeded he) to find myſelf the cauſe of your 'being treated in this manner, and ſhall imme-'diately withdraw, to prevent a repetition of it; 'as for me, ſince I am to loſe the happineſs of 'your converſation, it matters not what becomes 'of me!'——Saying which, he made her a moſt reſpectful bow, and with a look of the higheſt tenderneſs and grief, ſeemed to prepare to leave the room.

'Hold, Sir (exclaimed the lady, the warmth of 'whoſe reſentment at her ſon's behaviour made 'her the more readily melt at the diſtreſs of her 'lover) Hold, Sir! what are you going to do? 'Will you deſert me in this danger and diſtreſs?' —And then ſoftening her voice and looks into the greateſt tenderneſs, 'I thought (continued ſhe) 'I ſhould never want a protector while my friend 'lived.'

'lived.'—'Nor shall you, madam (answered 'he with an appearance of warmth that banished 'all reserve) My life shall protect you from every 'danger and affront. But,—oh, that I had a 'tie to justify such an attachment to the world, 'which else will censure it severely.'—And then, taking her hand, he bent his knee, and pressed it to his lips.

Such an act of gallantry was not to be resisted, in the condition she was then in! She bent forward to meet him, and laying her head upon his bosom as he arose, 'Let it be justified (she 'murmured in a broken, faultering accent) by 'every sacred tie of love and truth; of honour 'and religion!'——This was all he wanted! He seized her in his arms, and pressing her to his breast, sealed the contract on her trembling, withered lips.

The impatient love-sick fair now thought every obstacle to her wishes removed, and therefore distantly proposed sending for a priest directly, to tie the sacred knot, and prevent any designs her undutiful son might form to disappoint her happiness. But her prudent lover was in no such haste! He now had her secure, beyond danger of retreating; but as her person was not the only object of his desires, he wisely judged it best to refrain, a few moments, from the possession of that, to secure the more solid enjoyment of her fortune; as he was not certain, but this fit of fondness might wear off, and her natural affection for her son return, when her untimely passion should be gratified. He, therefore, resolved to improve her present disposition beyond the danger of repentance, and sent for the priest directly,

passing

passing the intermediate moments, till his arrival, in the most passionate, endearing dalliance.

But, just as the blushing, bashful bride was going to approach the altar, he stopped short, as if upon a sudden thought, and turning to her, 'This, madam, secures our present happiness, '(said he) but how are you to be revenged upon 'your base, ingrateful son? What certainty 'have I, that a return of your former fondness 'for him may not sacrifice me to his implacable 'resentment? Some settlement should first be 'made; and then anxiety and fear won't damp 'the ardour of our joys.'—'I understand you 'not! (answered she in confusion and astonish-'ment) What settlement can you mean? Do I 'not give you the possession of my fortune with 'myself?'——'True, madam (replied he) you 'do! And could I be sure of having them for 'ever, I should be satisfied! But death may rob 'me of you, and then your fortune will descend 'to your ungracious son, while I am thrown 'upon the world, destitute of every means of 'self-defence and support.'——'And can you 'doubt my love?' (added she, not a little sur-prized, and startled at his caution)—'I doubt 'it not! nor would I doubt it! (returned he) 'and therefore will remove all room for doubt.' —'What must I settle then? (said she) How 'much of my fortune will remove your fears, 'and satisfy your wishes? Here! take this pa-'per, and write down your terms!'—'That is 'soon done!' (said he, and taking the paper, directly wrote the word, ALL, and reached it to her.)—It is not easy to describe her astonishment and indignation, at the assurance and unreasonableness

sonableness of such a demand. 'What! ALL!' (said she, with evident emotion) 'Will no less 'do? Is nothing to be left to my disposal? This 'is too hard?'—The lover instantly perceived his ticklish situation! However, he was resolved to try the utmost, assured, that even if her resolution held, he was in no danger of losing her quite. 'Madam,' (said he, throwing his arms around her, and embracing her tenderly) 'I give 'you myself, and all I have; and I expect the 'like return: I pretend not to compare the va- 'lue of the gifts; but love is delicate, and will 'bear no abatement.'—

If the passions of youth are impetuous, those of old age are silly! The ardour of this address, with shame of being refused upon any account, thus in the very crisis of her hopes, made her comply, and she betrayed the confidence of her husband, and signed away the inheritance of her child, to gratify a preposterous, untimely, ridiculous love.

The return she met with was just! Her new husband, now all his schemes were accomplished, scorned to preserve even the decency of appearance, but threw off the mask directly, and treated her with such indignity and contempt, that she broke from him in despair, in the first week of her marriage, and threw herself upon the mercy of her basely ruined son; whose resentment was not proof to such a trial, but, yielding to filial piety, he shared, with her, the poor pittance which he happily had independent of her, till she sunk under the weight of misfortune, shame, and remorse.

Nor did her husband treat his first benefactor, or his parents, better. With the former he directly dropped

dropped all correſpondence; and, giving the latter an allowance of twenty pounds a year, juſt to keep them from ſtarving, he poſitively forbid their ever letting him hear from them more, on the penalty of forfeiting that, and every other inſtance of his favour.

Far from being ſatisfied with the ſucceſs of his villany, or enjoying the fortune he had ſo baſely obtained, his whole life has been ſpent, as you ſee, in anxious attempts to hide the meanneſs of his original, under the ſplendor of his appearance; and the iniquity by which he acquired his wealth, by vain oſtentation of charity and munificence.

CHAP. XV.

Continued: Some reflections that may appear impertinent to many, and unprofitable to more, but ſtill are neither improper nor unjuſt. The hiſtory of an honeſt attorney. More wonders! The way of the world reverſed: Right triumphant over might; and gratitude ſhewn in high life.

MOVE your eye towards the lower end of the table, and behold that perſon whoſe aſpect and appearance command veneration and eſteem. He was bred in a profeſſion, the very name of which is become a reproach, from the abuſe of unworthy profeſſors. Nor can it be otherwiſe, while every low-bred perſon, who is juſt able to give a ſon the firſt rudiments of education, and ambitious of ſeeing him in the character of a gentleman, is admitted to breed him an

Digitized by Google

an attorney; and as ſoon as he has ſerved a time, as to the moſt illiberal mechanic trade, to turn him looſe upon the world, to live by the practice of the very crimes and iniquities which his profeſſion was originally inſtituted to ſuppreſs, without any fortune to ſave him from the neceſſity of having recourſe to ſuch baſe means; and without being inſtructed in the principles of probity and virtue, to ſupport him againſt the temptations of the many frauds and villanies which his buſineſs brings him to the knowledge of: Nay, ſo far from giving any attention to this indiſpenſible duty, of forming the mind by proper inſtruction, ſuch is the perverſeneſs of man, that if a child betrays an early propenſity to chicane and fraud, by ſetting his play-fellows together by the ears, and cozening them of their toys, he is immediately marked for this profeſſion, and, inſtead of being corrected for ſuch a diſpoſition, and having it nipped in the bud, is encouraged in it, by hearing it made the omen and ground of his future ſucceſs in life, till it is confirmed beyond the ſenſe of ſhame or remorſe, and becomes the ruling principle of his life. The conduct, conſequent to ſuch education and principles, has brought the profeſſion into ſo great diſrepute, that ſcarce any perſon of character or fortune will breed a ſon to it; by which means the evil is daily aggravated more and more, and threatens to become abſolutely irremediable at laſt. For, at preſent, ſo many are the opportunities that tempt to iniquity in the practice, and ſo univerſal the reproach affixed to the very name of an attorney, that all regard to reputation, that powerful perſervative of virtue, ſeems to be in vain, and it requires an uncommon rectitude of heart

to

Digitized by Google

to support the conflict: but that there are some who are equal to this trial, and that the fault is not in the profession, but in the abuse of it, the person before us is an eminent instance.

A nobleman, who died some time since without legitimate issue, thought proper to bequeath, not only his own great acquisitions, but also the immense possessions of his ancestors, to a spurious son, without ever considering whether there might not possibly remain some distant branches of his family, capable of inheriting what they must have a just and legal title to, though the direct line of it failed in himself, accordingly the heir took possession of his adventitious fortune, and, as wealth hides every defect, entered into alliance, and made connections with persons of the most exalted rank, whose friendship and interest, supported by the immense riches he possessed, seemed to hold every enquiry into the justice of his title to them, in defiance.

But a generous heart is not easily terrified in a just cause: the person before us, by his knowledge in his profession, and the uprightness of his practice, had acquired a fortune, and established a character, that placed him above the reach of slander, and the frown of power. He had been born under the patronage of this nobleman's house, and in the course of his business, had happened to get some insight into the settlements of his family, by which he found, that it was not in his power to alienate the acquisitions of his illustrious ancestors, and give them to a stranger to their blood, while any of their descendants were in being. Such an act of injustice, therefore, raised the indignation and pity of his honest, generous heart, and he resolved to set

it

Digitized by Google

it aſide, notwithſtanding the trouble and expence that muſt neceſſarily attend ſuch an attempt.

The greateſt diſcouragement to his undertaking, was the difficulty of finding out, and aſcertaining the real heir, for the family was apparently extinct. But upon examining into the many alliances it had formerly made, which his known attachment gave him an eaſy opportunity of doing, he found, that ſome generations before, a daughter had been married to a nobleman of a neighbouring dependent kingdom; the iſſue of which marriage, if any remained, was the true, and only repreſentative of this noble houſe.

Having made this diſcovery, he went directly over to that kingdom, where, after a long and painful ſearch, he had the mortification to find, that the family was reduced, by the revolutions of government, and the calamity of the times, to two poor, low-bred, illiterate women, who had been married to mechanics of the meaneſt rank, and, being left widows, and without children, now ſtrove to procure a wretched ſubſiſtence, by joining their poor ſtocks to keep a chandler's ſhop, in a city, in the remoteſt part of the kingdom.

So melancholy an inſtance of the inſtability of human grandeur only raiſed his compaſſion, and confirmed his reſolution to vindicate the blood of the illuſtrious patrons of his family, from ſuch injuſtice and diſgrace. Accordingly, he inſtantly relieved their immediate diſtreſſes, and, taking all the proper methods for aſcertaining their deſcent, brought them over to this kingdom, lodged them in his own houſe, and treated them with the reſpect due to their noble blood and better hopes.

As

As ſoon as every thing was prepared for the great attempt, he regularly demanded a reſtitution of their right from the unjuſt poſſeſſor, and, upon his expected refuſal, inſtituted a ſuit at law for the recovery of it, in the proſecution of which, neither difficulties nor dangers, neither threats nor promiſes, could ſlacken his ardour, till he had obtained the juſtice he demanded for them. A detail of the proceedings, in ſuch an affair, muſt be diſtreſſing to any humane heart. It is ſufficient to ſay, that every method which the art of man could invent to impoſe upon judgment, and defeat juſtice, was exerted againſt him, for ſeveral years, in hopes of exhauſting his fortune, and wearing out the lives of his injured clients, (the elder of whom actually did die during the ſuit) and ſo diſappointing his hopes. But juſtice at length prevailed, and he recovered, for them, the inheritance of their anceſtors, leaving their antagoniſt only the immediate acquiſitions of his reputed father, which, large as they are, he eagerly labours to increaſe, by every artifice of ſordid avarice.

As for the heireſs, the exalted gratitude ſhe ſhewed, proved *her* noble blood. As ſoon as ſhe had executed all the forms of law neceſſary to give her an abſolute power over her fortune, and juſtly paid the expence, and rewarded the trouble of recovering it, as every branch of her family was extinct, ſhe thought it but juſtice to ſettle her great fortune upon the generous recoverer of it. Nor was ſhe content with leaving it to him, when ſhe could no longer make uſe of it herſelf, but obliging him to quit the buſineſs of his profeſſion, ſhe gave the greater part of it into his immediate poſſeſſion, and, retiring to one of

of the principal ſeats upon her eſtate, ſpent the remainder of her life in happineſs and eſteem: the goodneſs of her heart, and the true nobleneſs of her ſoul, drowning her want of early education in the ſuperior radiance of innate virtue.

The abſolute poſſeſſion of her entire fortune, which her death gave him much ſooner than he wiſhed, has made no alteration in the conduct of this worthy perſon, who invariably purſues the dictates of juſtice and benevolence in all his actions, making his wealth a bleſſing to all, whoſe wants and virtues marked them as objects worthy of his regard and aſſiſtance.

CHAP. XVI.

Continued: The happy fruits of unequal marriages. A ſhort way to pay long debts. The pleaſures of polite life. A bold ſtroke of female genius triumphant over law and religion: an unlucky miſtake brings an improper viſitor into too genteel company.

IMMEDIATELY below him, you ſee one of thoſe inſtances of inconſiſtency which diverſify the motly character of man. In the deep ſunk lines of his face you may read learning and intenſe thought, as the placid ſerenity of his eye ſhews an heart warmed with piety and moral virtue; what pity, that a liſtleſs indolence of mind throws a ſhade over ſo bright a character, and ſubmiſſion to the capricious yoke of female tyranny, make him paſſively guilty of the very follies

Digitized by Google

follies and vices moſt immediately oppoſite to his own virtue and good ſenſe!

The pious care of a good father had ſo improved the eminent abilities with which nature had bleſſed this gentleman, by the moſt judicious education, that the promiſe of his youth gave hopes of his being an ornament and advantage to his age and country; but one indiſcreet action overcaſt this pleaſing proſpect; and in its conſequences, has brought him to be the inſignificant thing you ſee.

This was a marriage of meer inclination, with a perſon, who had neither fortune, beauty, nor merit, to juſtify his choice; and who yet has taken the unjuſtifiable advantage of this indolence of his temper, to uſurp as abſolute an authority over him, as if ſhe poſſeſſed them all, in the moſt eminent degree, and conferred upon him the benefit and obligation ſhe herſelf received.

This makes his life one ſcene of the moſt irreconcileable inconſiſtency, between the wiſdom and virtue of the very few actions, in which he is admitted to follow the dictates of his own judgment, and the follies and vices, into which ſhe wantonly leads him every moment of his life. When I ſay vices, I mean thoſe of diſſipation, luxury, and extravagance, which, though the moſt injurious to ſociety, and productive of the worſt conſequences to particulars, are yet too often looked upon in another light, and thought harmleſs at leaſt, if not even commendable exertions of greatneſs, and generoſity of ſpirit, and the proper uſe of affluence of fortune; for, not content with the rational enjoyment of the fortune to which he raiſed her, in her proper ſphere, ſhe has aſſumed the abſolute diſpoſal of the whole,

whole, which she dissipates in every kind of fashionable folly and profusion, so as utterly to disable him from exerting the natural generosity and benevolence of his heart, in the extent and manner suited to his apparent wealth, and, too often from discharging the moral obligations of honesty, in the payment of his just and necessary debts.

Such an ungrateful abuse of obligation and influence may appear strange to you, who have been so little conversant in the ways of man; but to a more extended view of life, constant observation shews, that conferring a great benefit actually extinguishes gratitude, instead of raising it higher, and that the meaner the hands into which power is entrusted, the more exorbitant and tyrannical the use they make of it. Whether this arises from a consciousness of inability to pay so great a debt, and a consequent desire to cancel it, by an absolute breach, that may, at the same time, also support the debtor's pride, and seem to hide the obligation, by an implied disavowal in the former case, and from a desire of returning the tyranny felt before, in the latter, would be a curious, and not unprofitable disquisition, but shall be reserved to another place, where the occasion will illustrate it more forcibly; and only the justice of the observation, as to the present case in particular, proved by a few, out of innumerable instances of the same kind.

Of all the methods of dissipating wealth, and precipitating ruin, the most speedy and effectual is gaming. The present prevalence of the passion for this vice (for to call it by any other name would be a false tenderness) among all ranks and sexes, has been already often observed,

as

Digitized by Google

as it is the characteriſtic of the times. However, to ſoften the horror, with which the barefaced practice of it, by the fairer ſex, muſt ſtrike every rational mind, it is blended with matters of meer amuſement, and repreſented only as an innocent method of relieving converſation, when a number of perſons meet in public company, which muſt otherwiſe languiſh and grow tireſome, or elſe fall upon improper ſubjects. The ingenious expedient has given riſe to thoſe meetings at the houſes of the greateſt faſhion, which, from the noiſe, buſtle, and confuſion, inſeparable from ſuch crowds, are emphatically called *Routs*. In theſe, the miſtreſs of the houſe always preſides, and, conſequently, attendance at them is looked upon as a compliment peculiar to her, and in which her huſband has no ſhare. For this reaſon, the greater the crowd collected, the more important the entertainer appears, and therefore no pains or expence is ſpared in inducing them to attend.

From the character already given of the wife of this gentleman, it may be concluded, that ſhe exerted all her efforts, to make a figure by the frequency and greatneſs of her own routs, and by the profuſion with which ſhe gamed away her money at thoſe of others. However, the mode was become ſo univerſal, and ſo eagerly purſued, that ſhe ſoon found it was impoſſible for her to diſtinguiſh herſelf in the manner ſhe deſired, if ſhe could not ſtrike out ſome new way; but in this ſhe was not long at a loſs, the boldneſs of her genius prompting her to try an expedient, which no one before her had dared to venture upon.

This

Digitized by Google

This was to fix her routs upon the day ſet apart, by laws, human and divine, for the duties of religion, and which till then had been held ſacred to theſe alone, from every kind of buſineſs and recreation. So bold a ſtroke neceſſarily attracted the notice of the public, and the remiſneſs of the legiſlature overlooking it, the crowds who, from an inſenſibility to thoſe duties, were utterly at a loſs how to get rid of ſo much time, gladly embraced ſuch an opportunity, and flocked to her in numbers, that amply ſatisfied her ambition. Such ſucceſs and impunity ſoon made her example imitated; but, as ſhe had led the way, the merit of that ſecured her from being ſupplanted by any rival, and having her company decoyed from her.

The circumſtances of her huſband's birth, and the principles in which he had been educated, made him at firſt look upon ſuch an inſult upon religion, with the ſtrongeſt horror: but ſhe made light of his ſcruples, and over-ruled all his objections, with ſuch an abſolute authority, that, for peace ſake, he was obliged to ſubmit, and join in what he dared not contradict; till he has at length forfeited the acquaintance of every ſerious, rational, and religious perſon.

He was, at firſt, greatly affected at this falling off, and much diſtreſſed to think what it could proceed from, as he was not ſenſible of any deviation, in his own ſentiments, from the principles which had made his acquaintance ſought by every man of ſenſe and virtue; but an accident ſoon opened his eyes to the abſurdity of his ſituation.

The acquaintance, upon which he juſtly ſet the greateſt value, was with a prelate of diſtinguiſhed merit and virtue, an intimate friend of his deceaſed

Digitized by Google

ceaſed father. With him he ſpent the happieſt hours of his life; and, in the wiſdom and piety of his converſation, found relief for the ſick heart, from the follies, and riotous exceſſes which he was a ſlave to at home. Though he always met with the moſt benevolent and friendly reception from this worthy perſon, yet the coolneſs with which he found himſelf treated by ſome others, made his apprehenſion ſo ready to take alarm, that, upon his grace's not returning a viſit or two, with the exacteſt punctuality, either from ſickneſs, or ſome neceſſary engagement, he could not help expreſſing his uneaſineſs, with ſuch warmth, when he went to ſee him next, that his grace, who, tho' he deſpiſed ceremony, would not give pain or offence to any perſon, eſpecially one for whom he had ſo ſincere an eſteem, accounted for his late omiſſion, by giving the real reaſon of it, and told him that he would do himſelf the pleaſure of going to ſee him any day, when he might be ſure of finding him at home.

The gentleman anſwered, that, if his grace would appoint any day agreeable and convenient to him, he ſhould gladly break through all engagements, and attend to receive him. This was a ſtrain of complaiſance which the prelate would not agree to, but inſiſted upon knowing what day he was uſually at home, when he would call upon him, in a friendly manner, without putting him to the trouble of waiting for him in particular.

The affectionate, ſincere manner in which this was ſaid, was ſo pleaſing to the gentleman, that it put him entirely off his guard, and he anſwered eagerly, and without ever conſidering that the next day

day was Sunday, when he was always at home. This was ſtrictly true; he was always at home on that day, becauſe it was his lady's day for ſeeing company, if he had in the leaſt reflected on which he would never have appointed his grace to come, as he was ſenſible, that he ſhould for ever forfeit his acquaintance by it.

Though that was a day which the prelate dedicated to employments of a very different nature from paying complimentary viſits, there was ſomething in the earneſtneſs of the manner in which the gentleman appointed it, that made him apprehend he had ſome ſecret uneaſineſs upon his mind, which he wanted to communicate, for aſſiſtance, or advice, wherefore he complied without heſitation, nor did the other ever recollect the impropriety of what he had done, till it was too late to be remedied.

For his grace going the next evening, as he had promiſed, was not a little ſurpriſed to find a crowd of coaches before the door, for he had never heard of, nor ſuſpected the ſcene that was acting; but, however, being informed that his friend was at home, he thought it beſt to proceed, and ſo lighting from his chariot, was ſhewn up, into a room, where there was a mixed multitude ſeriouſly engaged at cards.

The very mention of ſuch a ſcene would have ſtruck him with horror, judge then what his ſentiments muſt be at the ſight; and particularly to be betrayed to it, as he imagined, on purpoſe to inſult him, by a man whom he eſteemed, and whoſe father he had ſincerely loved. As ſoon as he had recovered himſelf from his aſtoniſhment, he directly turned about, and departed, juſt as he was perceived by the maſter of the houſe,

Digitized by Google

whoſe confuſion at his own indiſcretion, in appointing ſuch a time, which he inſtantly recollected, is not to be deſcribed. He ſtarted from his chair, and exclaiming, 'Good God! what 'have I done?' —— would have followed him directly, if his lady, with whom he was playing and who was juſt then *dealing*, had not ſtopped him, and inſiſted on knowing what was the matter.

'Good God! madam (ſaid he in the utmoſt 'confuſion and diſtreſs) did not you ſee his grace 'come to the door this moment? I was to pay 'him a viſit yeſterday, and unfortunately en-'gaged him to return it this evening, without 'ever conſidering that it was *your night.*'—'And 'is that all (anſwered ſhe, who had gone on 'with her *deal*, and juſt turned up an *ace)* then 'pray ſit ſtill, and play your cards; you ſee '*clubs* are *trump!* His grace may come at a pro-'per time, if he pleaſes?'——

Great as the huſband's diſtreſs was, the accent with which theſe words were ſpoken, nailed him to the chair; ſo that he was forced to let his grace go home, and remain that night in an opinion ſo painful and injurious to him. But he laid not his head at reſt, till he had written his grace a letter of apology for his miſtake, which he candidly acknowledged, and conjured him to forgive, in the moſt earneſt manner.

The imaginary inſult, of being trepanned into ſuch a ſcene, had at firſt provoked his grace beyond the uſual evenneſs of his temper; but he had had time to cool before he received the letter (for he never lay down in anger, nor aroſe but in charity with all mankind) and, reading it diſpaſſionately, was ſo moved at the ſituation into which

Digitized by Google

which he found his friend fallen, that all thoughts of perſonal reſentment vaniſhed, and he anſwered it with the greateſt humanity and tenderneſs, drawing the folly and danger of ſuch a complaiſance in its proper ſtrength, and urging his return to the practice of his own principles, with every argument of reaſon, virtue, and religion, promiſing to renew his acquaintance with the ſame, or greater intimacy than before, as ſoon as he ſhould deſiſt from ſuch an impious profation and abuſe of a day made ſacred, to piety and devotion, by every civil and religious law; till he ſhould do which, it was inconſiſtent with his character and principles to keep up any further intercourſe with a perſon in ſuch circumſtances.

The juſtice of this reaſoning was acknowledged by the perſon to whom it was addreſſed, and the loſs, which followed the neglect of it, ſeverely felt, but he wanted reſolution to reſume the authority that was neceſſary for putting it in execution, and ſo poorly ſubmits againſt his better judgment, to all the impoſitions of a tyranny, which was firſt erected upon his folly, and ſtill ſubſiſts, by his indolence.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XVII.

Continued: Confuſion worſe confounded, rout on rout: the transformation of a conſtable into a devil introduces a ſtory of the Devil's dancing in maſquerade, and frightens a polite aſſembly into a fit of devotion, which laſts an whole night with moſt of them. A glimpſe of the courage of a modern man of honour.

BUT, though ſuch meetings as theſe are held in apparent defiance of the laws, you muſt not imagine, that thoſe who go to them are inſenſible of the impropriety, or unapprehenſive of the danger of ſuch a conduct. By danger, I mean the immediate one, from the ſecular power, for that of the divine wrath they never gave themſelves the trouble of thinking about.

Of this a remarkable inſtance happened at this place, not very long after the affair of his grace. A gentleman of humour, as well as reaſon, who was intimate in this gentleman's family, and had often ſtrove in vain to convince his lady of the diſagreeable conſequences that might attend ſuch an avowed diſregard to decency at leaſt, reſolved to take another method, and try what effect ridicule and ſhame might have, where every argument from reaſon had failed.

Accordingly, one night, in the midſt of the riot, he contrived to have it whiſpered in the company, that a neighbouring *conſtable*, remarkable for puniſhing every offence, for which he did not receive a proper compoſition, intended to come

Digitized by Google

come with the church-wardens, and all the parish officers at his heels, and interrupt their diversion; and dressing himself exactly like the constable, whom he nearly resembled in size and figure, and buckling on a wooden leg, like him he stalks among them, just as the servant announced his coming, by the name of the constable, whom he personated.

It is impossible to describe the astonishment and confusion of the whole company at such an attack! Tho' there were several present, whose rank placed them above his authority, surprise and consciousness of their guilt so far deprived them of all resolution and presence of mind, that they joined in the just fear of the rest, and attempted to make an ignominious escape with them. The candles were all instantly put out, the windows were broke open, and stars and ribbons were seen among the crowd that leaped into the court, and ran through the streets, without regarding dirt or cold, while the more timorous sex stood petrified with fear, uncertain which to face, shame or danger.

In the mean time, the pretended constable took the advantage to slip off his wooden leg, tye-wig, and long cloak, just as the servants had taken the alarm, and come in to see what was the matter, and so had an opportunity of enjoying the whole scene, without danger of being suspected for the author of it.

The first question which the lady of the house, whose active spirit first recovered itself, asked, was, What was become of the constable, and who let him in? At the mention of a constable, the servants all started, as not one of them knew any think of him; and the very servant, who had

Digitized by Google

announced his entrance, declared he had never heard a word of him, for, as he had not told his office, not one of them had the leaſt notion of ſuch a perſon's preſuming to come among them. But upon telling his name, and deſcribing his appearance, their ſurprize was changed the other way; they all remembered his entrance, but every one of them poſitively inſiſted that he had not gone back; ſo that the queſtion now was, What could have poſſibly become of him? as his leaping out of the window, as the others had gallantly done, was neither neceſſary, nor indeed poſſible for him to do, maimed as he was.

While they were forming ſagacious conjectures, on ſo ſtrange and unaccountable an affair, the metamorphoſed conſtable, who had joined in the converſation, ſaid to an old lady, who ſeemed more ſtrongly affected than any other of the company, that the oddneſs of this affair put him in mind of one, not very unlike it in many circumſtances, which he had read, in accounts of good authority, to have happened in *France* during the minority of *Lewis* XIV.

This raiſed the curioſity of all who heard him, who immediately crouded round him, and deſired him to tell it. At firſt he ſeemed rather unwilling, and very gravely prefaced his ſtory with declaring, that for his part he believed nothing of the matter, tho' he owned it was related by writers of undoubted veracity, and atteſted in a manner almoſt beyond any fact he had ever read in hiſtory. Having thus prepared them, for ſomething extraordinary, he proceeded thus: 'You 'know, Madam,' (addreſſing himſelf to the old lady, to whom he had firſt mentioned it, and whom he knew plumed herſelf not a little upon her

Digitized by Google

her knowledge in *ſecret* hiſtory, every thing that bore the name of which ſhe had read, and implicitly believed every word of) 'that, in the minority of *Lewis the Great*, *Mazarine*, who 'governed the kingdom, took every method of 'diverting the attention of the young monarch 'from ſtate affairs, by all kinds of pleaſurable 'entertainment, that could be deviſed.'———

'True, Sir, (anſwered the old lady, who could not poſſibly reſtrain her deſire of ſhewing her knowledge.) 'And that is ſaid to have influenced the conduct of his future life, in that 'expenſive pomp and vain magnificence, which 'attracted the admiration of foreigners, while it 'exhauſted and ruined his ſubjects. Hem! 'hem! but I beg pardon, Sir! pray don't let 'me interrupt you.'——

'As this *Mazarine* was an *Italian*, you know, 'Madam,' (continued he, to which ſhe aſſented with a nod, as ſhe conſtantly did) 'it was natural for him to have a fondneſs for the entertainments of his own country, he therefore introduced the *Italian* opera into *France*. The 'firſt time it was preſented, one of the principal parts of the entertainment conſiſted of a 'comic dance that was performed by ſix of the 'nimbleſt caperers in all *Italy*. At firſt they 'went on expertly, and with great applauſe; but 'immediately found themſelves at a loſs, and 'were unable to proceed any farther, being put 'out by the intruſion of a ſtrange dancer, who 'came among them no body could tell how, 'and diſconcerted the entire ſcheme of their 'dance, which had been calculated only for 'their own number. This at length threw 'them into ſuch confuſion, that they were

Digitized by Google

obliged to ſtand ſtill! when the manager of 'the entertainment coming to them, to ſee what 'was the matter, perceived the cauſe of their 'confuſion, and obliged them all to unmaſk,' (for they were dreſſed exactly alike, and wore maſks) 'that he might detect and ſeize the im-'pertinent intruder, when, to his, and the utter 'aſtoniſhment of every one preſent, he vaniſhed 'as unaccountably as he had come, though the 'eyes of the whole houſe were upon him, and 'there appeared to be no more than the original 'number, and the ſame perſons, who began the 'dance. I believe, Madam, you may recollect 'the other circumſtances of the ſtory, which I 'do not chuſe to mention, on this occaſion; 'they are told in the *ſecret memoirs* of cardinal '*Mazarine*.'—'I do, Sir,' (returned ſhe, with great emotion) 'remember ſomething of it, 'But really,'—'Dear Madam, (interrupted ano-'ther, whoſe curioſity was raiſed too high to 'bear a moment's delay) pray let the gentleman 'proceed! When he has ended, if he omits any 'thing, you may then inform us farther! Pray, 'Sir, do proceed.'——

Why, really, Madam, (continued he, under ſome apparent confuſion) 'I am at a loſs how to 'act, and had much rather be excuſed; howe-'ver, I muſt beg leave to obſerve, that for my own 'part, I do not believe a ſingle ſyllable of the 'ſtories of ghoſts, and apparitions, and devils, 'and ſuch like ſtuff, that ever were told, though 'this ſtory in particular is told in a manner, and 'confirmed with circumſtances, not eaſily to be 'contradicted.'——

This ſolemn preface raiſed the curioſity of them all to a torture, and alarmed apprehenſions, that would

would not admit of a moment's ſuſpence. 'Dear 'Sir, pray proceed' (echoed from an hundred mouths at once, as they preſſed cloſer to him:) The gentleman bowed and continued: 'The 'whole company was now thrown into a con-'fuſion, as great as that of the dancers: they 'had all reckoned a ſeventh perſon, and the 'connoiſſeurs, in particular, had obſerved that 'one of them had ſhewn greater agility, and '*cut* higher, than any one they had ever ſeen be-'fore, and indeed than they thought it poſſible 'for any human perſon to do. This hint alarm-'ed the whole houſe, and it was immediately 'concluded that the devil had maliciouſly join-'ed in the dance, on purpoſe to ſpoil their 'ſport; an opinion, which one or two unlucky 'circumſtances ſeemed to give weight to, which 'were, that all the dancers had been dreſſed 'like devils, the opera being *The Fall of Man*, 'and the dance exhibited, as a triumph of the 'devils upon the occaſion, and that it was acted 'on a *Sunday evening*. Trifling as theſe circum-'ſtances really were, they threw the whole au-'dience into a conſternation; ſome directly fan-'cied the candle burnt blue, others that the place 'ſmelt ſtrongly of ſulphur; and one more impu-'dently fooliſh than all the reſt, inſiſted that he 'had obſerved the *cloven* foot; but what is moſt 'ſurpriſing of all was, that the cardinal, who 'could not be ſuſpected of ſuperſtition, was ſo 'affected by it, that he ordered the houſe to be 'diſmiſſed directly, and that opera never to 'be performed again, nor any other on a *Sunday*, 'which was obſerved during his life, and for 'ſome time after.'——

It is impoſſible for words to deſcribe the ſituation of the company, at the concluſion of this

Digitized by Google

ſtory. At the mention of the candles burning blue, all turned their eyes about, and fancied the ſame; as to their ſmelling ſulphur, it was more than imagination, the pretended conſtable having taken an opportunity, while they were all in confuſion, to throw, unperceived, a compoſition which he had brought with him on purpoſe, into the fire, which had filled the room with a moſt ſulphureous ſmell, and more than one of the company declared, *they thought* they ſaw a cloven foot, or ſomething very like it, fly out of the window.

The ſcene was now changed to an appearance really frightful. Every lengthened viſage was as pale as death, every haggard eye ſtaring in wild affright. The old lady, to whom the tale had been particularly addreſſed, confirmed every ſyllable of it, and added many circumſtances from ſecret hiſtories, of her own immediate invention: and every one preſent had ſome ſimilar ſtory to tell in ſupport of it, till they at length terrified one another to that degree, that they were afraid to look around, or even raiſe their voices to bid their ſervants prepare for their departure.

The gentleman, pleaſed at the ſucceſs of his artifice, reſolved to improve it to the utmoſt, and take advantage of their preſent ſituation, to work them up to ſome action, that ſhould make them aſhamed, at leaſt, ever to be guilty of the like profanation of that ſacred day again: 'De-'fend us, Heaven!' (exclaimed he, fixing his eyes with horror, on one of the windows) 'What 'can that be?' This compleated the terror: they all believed the devil was returning to deſtroy them, for the boldeſt of them all had not the ſpirit to turn her eyes, to ſee what he looked at,

Digitized by Google

at, and joined moſt devoutly in his ejaculation to Heaven for defence.

He ſaw this was the proper moment for what he intended, and ſo dropping ſuddenly upon his knees, in which they all followed his example, he repeated aloud the confeſſion in the ſervice of the church, adding, with particular emphaſis, to the ſins of commiſſion, this of breaking the ſabbath, and to thoſe of omiſſion, the neglect of the duties of religion, to which it was devoted; and concluded with a ſolemn vow, never to be guilty of either again, if Heaven would remit its wrath, and ſpare them for the preſent.

All the while he had been performing this ceremony, he had kept his eyes fixed upon the window, and, at the end of it, exclaimed in a rapture, 'Our vows are heard! it vaniſhes! 'the danger's over!'——Upon which he aroſe, as did they all, and fell into the moſt ſerious and devout converſation, upon ſo ſignal an inſtance of divine favour and mercy, while their coaches and chairs were getting ready to carry them home, when they retired with thoughts very different from thoſe which they uſually brought from ſuch places.

Though every lady in the company had been frightened into a fit of devotion, by what had happened, none ſuffered ſo ſeverely by it as the lady of the houſe, who notwithſtanding the public contempt ſhe ſhewed for religion, was ſo fearful of ghoſts and hobgoblins, that after having perſuaded her huſband to lay out a large ſum of money (much more than prudence would have permitted) in repairing and fitting up, in the modern taſte, a beautiful antique caſtle that was upon his eſtate, upon hearing that a particular

Digitized by Google

cular apartment in it was haunted by a ſpirit quitted it directly, and never could be prevailed upon to ſleep a ſecond night in it. As ſoon therefore as the company was all gone, and ſhe left to her own meditations, her fears recurred ſo faſt upon her, that ſhe fell into fits, which ſeemed to threaten her with the total loſs of her reaſon, raving of devils and damnation, and railing againſt cards, and ſabbath-breaking, with all the vehemence of a modern enthuſiaſt, among his mad brethren in *Moorfields*. But this did not laſt long! the gentleman, to avoid detection, had been obliged to leave his tye-wig, cloak, and wooden leg behind him. Theſe, which were found upon clearing out the apartments, unravelled the whole myſtery of the affair, and ſhewed that it had been all a trick; nor was the lady long at a loſs for the author of it; (for the firſt mention of the diſcovery had put an end to her fits of fear and devotion) the pains he had often taken to perſuade her againſt theſe meetings, on this particular day, and the zeal he ſhewed in the late affair, convinced her it was all tranſacted by him. This threw her into the moſt violent rage againſt him; but as it was impoſſible to prove, and he denied the fact when charged with it, ſhe could have no other ſatisfaction of him, than that of diſappointing his deſign, by returning to her former practice with double eagerneſs, and aggravating the ſcandal of it by every act of irreligion and profaneneſs, that ſhe could deviſe, in which hopeful courſe ſhe ſtill perſiſts.

As for the male part of the company, who had ſo manfully leaped out of the windows, and made their eſcape through the cold and dirt of the night;

Digitized by Google

night; ſome of them caught cold, that coſt them their noſes, and one or two loſt their lives in duels, which they fought in vindication of their characters, from ſo ſcandalous an aſperſion, for it was thought proper to deny the whole ſtory.

CHAP. XVIII.

Continued: Maternal tenderneſs of an uncommon kind. A moſt magnificent wedding diſappointed, by an unhappy inſtance of female frailty. A new method of calculating general opinion. An unlucky accident changes a ſcene of joy into grief, and affords an uſeful caution to old age and infirmity, to guide their ſtep with proper care. A drawn battle. An inſtance of fell revenge makes room for a ſtranger, who reſtores general harmony.

NOR is ſhe content with offering this flagrant inſult to religion and law; the tendereſt feelings of nature are alſo wantonly made the objects of her groſſeſt ridicule; in the abſurdity of which, to ſhew her matrimonial power in its utmoſt plentitude, ſhe obliges her paſſive mate to bear his fooliſh part, and ſacrifice common ſenſe, as he had before done conſcience, to her capricious tyranny.

As ſhe has no children, upon whom ſhe can diſplay maternal care and love, ſhe affects holding the important and inexpreſſible tenderneſs and duty of theſe in the loweſt contempt: and, to ſhew this, in the moſt glaring colours, proſtitutes

Digitized by Google

ſtitutes them upon ſome inſignificant animal, in all the ſolemn pomp and parade of ceremony, uſual on ſuch occaſions, to make the ridicule more ſtriking.

The preſent worthy object of her affection is an *owl*, which ſhe careſſes and treats with all the endearments of a darling child; calling it the fondeſt names, talking to it for hours together, every *Sunday* morning, and entertaining her moſt intimate acquaintances with a particular detail of its engaging qualities and ſenſible actions! nor does her humour ſtop here, ſhe dreſſes her favourite in all the fantaſtic extravagance of the mode, makes a complimentary enquiry after its health, part of the ceremonial of her acquaintance, and celebrates the anniverſary of its birth, with the expenſive magnificence of a public entertainment, when the dear creature is produced, with all the ceremony and ſtate of a royal babe, to receive the praiſe and careſſes of the company; and, to finiſh the farce, her huſband is obliged to act his part, and join with her in receiving the congratulations paid upon the happy occaſion.

Perhaps you will imagine that ſuch an unaccountable caprice is meant to expoſe the ſervility of complaiſance, and to ſhew to what an height it is capable of being ſtrained, to gratify the humours of the rich. Such a concluſion is not unnatural, nor the general ſatire implied in it, unjuſt; but here, in reſpect to her, it does not hold, for ſhe has no ſuch aim in view, nor thinks of any thing beyond the immediate gratification of her own whim; on the contrary, ſhe would be as ready to pay the ſame compliment to any of her acquaintaince, if they required it: indeed the ſhare ſhe makes her huſband take in the ceremony,

Digitized by Google

mony, bears a different conſtruction, and is plainly ſeen to be deſigned as a moſt ſevere and inſolent ridicule upon him, as it is no ſecret, that ſhe imputes her want of children to his fault; a charge, which his blind ſubmiſſion to her will, makes not improbable.

But this is not the firſt inſtance of the extravagance of her humour, nor he the only one who has been made the object of public ridicule by it: though he has never miſſed of his ſhare.

Before her preſent favourite, a cat engroſſed her fondneſs in as eminent a degree, but unhappily loſt that and her life together by a ſlip of female frailty: for ſlighting the example of her miſtreſs's chaſtity, ſhe had taken an opportunity to carry on an intrigue with a cat in the neighbourhood, whom ſhe uſed to meet in the evenings upon the leads of the houſe, while her miſtreſs was abroad, and her own attendants engaged in parties of pleaſure below ſtairs.

This unfortunately broke through all her miſtreſs's great deſigns, who was juſt then in treaty for a marriage between her and the male favourite of a lady of quality in *Paris*, the preliminaries of which were all ſettled, and nothing remaining, but to determine where the wedding ſhould be celebrated; ſhe, for the honour of the ſex, demanded that the gallant ſhould wait upon his miſtreſs, and the other inſiſting upon the example of all royal marriages, where the bride goes to the bridegroom; a reaſon ſo juſt, that the heroine of our tale diſputed it only for form-ſake, and was preparing to ſet out for *Paris*, with her huſband and a grand retinue, to ſolemnize the wedding, as ſoon as the proxy, which had

Digitized by Google

had been propoſed to be ſent by the other party, ſhould arrive.

Upon the firſt diſcovery of it, therefore, by apparent ſymptoms of the frail one's pregnancy, the whole houſe was in an uproar, every ſervant turned off, and a council of her moſt intimate friends directly ſummoned, to conſider what was to be done in ſuch an emergency, and how the treaty of marriage could be broke off, without giving offence to the other parties, or expoſing her own diſgrace. After much and mature deliberation, it was reſolved to ſend an expreſs immediately to *Paris*, to prevent the proxy's ſetting out, and to apologize for breaking off the marriage, on account of a pre-contract, into which madam *Grimalkin* had inconſiderately entered, without the knowledge of her miſtreſs; and, to make this embaſſy the more reſpected and effectual, the perſon thought moſt proper to be ſent upon it, was her huſband, who accordingly was obliged to ſet out on his journey directly, but was reſcued from the ridicule of it, by a fit of the gout, which arreſted him at his firſt ſtage; ſo that he was forced to transfer the honour of the employment to his gentleman, who acquitted himſelf of it with great reputation.

But this was not the only diſtreſs in which this unfortunate miſbehaviour of the favourite involved her miſtreſs. In the firſt tranſports of her rage, ſhe had ordered her to be taken out of her preſence, and publickly vowed that ſhe would never ſee her more: but, when her reſentment cooled a little, her former fondneſs returned, and ſhe could not bear the thought of abandoning her, for a firſt fault, to the low life of a common cat, or depriving herſelf of the pleaſure ſhe enjoyed

Digitized by Google

enjoyed in her company. But the difficulty was how to receive her again into favour, conſiſtently with the purity of her own character, and without ſeeming, in ſome meaſure, to countenance the incontinency ſhe had been guilty of, by ſuch lenity. While ſhe was in this perplexity between delicacy and love, her inſtructor in the important ſcience of gaming moſt luckily happened to pay her a morning viſit, to give her a lecture, and inform her of ſome new diſcoveries he had made in his myſterious art. As ſhe knew that he was a nice caſuiſt, the moment he approached her toilet, ſhe informed him of the whole affair, and deſired his advice.

After taking ſome time to deliberate upon the caſe, 'Madam,' (ſaid the ſage, ſhaking his hoary head, and extending the fore finger of his right hand) 'this is a very difficult point to decide: however, I have calculated the chances on each ſide, and have found that the odds are as ſeven, one fourth, and two fifteenths to five, nearly (for it would be too great a trouble for you to examine the proof of it in more minute fractions) in favour of your receiving the offender into your good graces again, which I prove thus: All the ladies in the world are liable to ſome failing or other; now as from weakneſs of conſtitution, derived from the goodneſs of their families, or brought on by their own intenſe application to the pleaſures of polite life, there are not above five who are guilty of this particular foible (I mean among people of faſhion, ſuch as you converſe with) to eight who are not, it is evident that there will be almoſt eight who will not condemn your conduct, for five who will; it being

'ing the general maxim, always to exclaim 'againſt the faults of which we are guilty our-'ſelves, to deceive the generality of the world, 'and make an appearance of our being innocent 'of them. If this reaſoning does not appear 'plain, I will draw it out at length, and adapt 'the calculations to the general rules of *Whiſt*, 'ſo that they may be proved by the cards, as 'the method moſt familiar, to you, to ſatisfy 'your own ſcruples, and anſwer the objections 'of your friends, for ladies cannot be too cir-'cumſpect in affairs of this kind, where ſo deep 'a ſtake is played for. The ſcheme will not take 'up much time to draw; nor be attended with 'much expence, not above twenty pieces, or 'ſome ſuch trifle; for you know I never am in 'the leaſt unreaſonable with my friends.'——

This judicious ſolution was ſo agreeable to her, that ſhe ſaw the juſtice of it directly, and embraced it without a moment's delay, ordering the poor delinquent to be immediately brought to her, and, after a little gentle chiding, almoſt killing it with her careſſes. As to the ſage caſuiſt, ſhe thanked him for his deciſion, and, having received his lecture, deſired him to reduce his arguments into the form he propoſed, as ſoon as he pleaſed, as ſhe never had any objection to his demands, and then diſpatched cards immediately to all her acquaintances, to inform them of the reconciliation, and invite them to an entertainment which ſhe gave upon the happy occaſion.

According, they all attended, and poured out their compliments in the moſt polite profuſion; but, in the height of their joy, an unfortunate

Digitized by Google

tunate accident happened, that changed their congratulation into condolance.

As the dear creature was handed about, to receive the careſſes of the company, an elderly gentlewoman, to ſhew her extreme fondneſs for it, by keeping it as long as ſhe could upon her boſom, would needs carry it herſelf to a lady of quality, who ſat on the other ſide of the room, and deſired to have it brought to her; but, ſtriving to be more alert than her paralytic tottering would permit, ſhe fell at her length upon the floor, and almoſt cruſhed the poor animal to death.

You may conceive what a confuſion this threw the whole company into: the cat ſcreamed, the old lady roared, and the voice of all preſent echoed a general exclamation: and, to heighten the diſtreſs, they all got up at once, and, ruſhing together to raiſe the falling pair, hindered each other ſo, that they lay ſtruggling in no very agreeable ſituation, or decent poſture, on the floor; for the cat enraged at the injury ſhe had received, exerted all her ſtrength for revenge, and fixed her claws in the face and neck of her ſuppoſed enemy, growling with the moſt envenomed ſpite, which made the innocent author of her diſaſter, roar, kick and ſprawl, with all her might, as ſhe was unable to diſengage herſelf from the claws of her furious adverſary, or even riſe from the ground where ſhe lay.

At length, ſome of the company made a ſhift to raiſe and part the combatants; when the poor gentlewoman was hurried to her chair, with her face and neck all in a ſtream of blood, the attention of the company being entirely taken up with

Digitized by Google

with the fright of the lady of the houſe for the danger of her favourite.

The ſpirit and ſtrength which ſhe had ſhewed in revenge of the injury ſhe had received, was ſome conſolation to her miſtreſs, as it ſeemed to ſhew that ſhe could not have been very much hurted; but one of the company happening to mention her condition, renewed her fright, and made her reſolve inſtantly to ſend for one of the moſt eminent male practitioners of the obſtetric art, to enquire into the circumſtances of her caſe, and adminiſter any aſſiſtance that might be neceſſary upon the unhappy occaſion.

Accordingly a ſervant was inſtantly diſpatched in the miſtreſs's name, to the doctor, who, attended without a moment's delay, imagining, from the urgency of the meſſage, that ſome lady of diſtinction might be taken ill in her houſe, as he knew the lady herſelf could have no occaſion for him, and the footman could give him no farther information, than that ſome accident had happened in the company of which there was the uſual croud. As ſoon as he arrived, he was ſhewn directly into the drawing-room, whither the lady, with a few ſelect friends had retired, where one of them leading him up to her, and lifting up an handkerchief, that covered the poor dear creature in her lap, opened the caſe to him, for the miſtreſs's grief was ſo great, that ſhe was not able to ſpeak.

It is impoſſible to deſcribe the rage into which this threw the doctor: he looked upon it as an inſult, not to be forgiven; and, as he could not wreak his reſentment upon ladies, by any act of violence upon their perſons, reſolved to ſhew it, by his treatment of the creature, for which they implored

Digitized by Google

implored his assistance. Accordingly, he stooped very gravely, and taking it out of the mistress's lap, laid it on the ground, and setting his heel upon its head, crushed it to death, before any one had time to interpose in its behalf; then turning to the lady, whose astonishment was so great, that she had not power to speak, 'There, ma-'dam!' (said he) your favourite is delivered 'from all danger of abortion; but take care how 'you provoke another time the resentment of 'a man, whom nobody provokes with impu-'nity.'———Saying this, he turned about and marched away, leaving the whole company, and particularly the mistress of the innocent victim of his vengeance, in a condition not to be expressed: she wept, beat her breast, stamped with her feet upon the floor, and vowed the bittersest vengeance; nor is it easy to say, how far her passion might have transported her, had not a gentleman entered the room that very moment with a young owl in his hand, which he had taken out of the nest that morning.

The sovereign remedy for a woman's grief, for the loss of any favourite, whether a cat, a sparrow, or an husband, is a new one. The sight of the owl instantly struck her: it had such a gravity and wisdom in its looks, that she resolved to make it the confident of all her secrets, and the only counsellor from whom she would take advice that should contradict her inclinations. Accordingly, poor *Grimalkin* was ordered to be taken away, and the new favourite received in her place. This restored the general harmony and good humour; and the entertainment that was designed to celebrate Mrs. *Pussy*'s restoration to her mistress's bosom, served for the reception

of

Digitized by Google

of the ſtranger. However, though a new favourite conſoled the miſtreſs for the loſs of the former, ſhe did not neglect to pay proper reſpect to its remains: the body was carefully laid up till next morning, when an eminent undertaker was ſent for, and orders given for her decent interment.

CHAP. XIX.

More happy fruits of female government. The hiſtory of an eminent patroneſs of the polite arts. Her peculiar method of ſhewing a diſtinguiſhed taſte and judgment. An extraordinary charge in a bill at an inn.

TURN your eye now to the other ſide, and obſerve that ſuperannuated figure of foppery, at the upper end of the table, who plumes himſelf like a peacock upon the gaudineſs of his dreſs, and gives his contribution with an oſtentation and affected dignity that would diſgrace a prince. He is another inſtance of the happy fruits of woman's government. With all the importances he aſſumes here, in his own houſe he is a perfect cypher, of no conſequence in himſelf, but as he adds to that of his wife.

So inſignificant a character may be thought incapable of affording either inſtruction or improvement, ſufficient to reward the trouble of diſplaying it; but then it introduces another, to which it ſerves as a ſhade to ſhew the glaring colours of it in a proper light, and illuſtrate the vanity,

Digitized by Google

vanity, as the former did the vice of female caprice and ambition.

He had the ſolid advantage of entering into life with a very affluent fortune; but inſtead of making it a means of happineſs to himſelf, and benefit to ſociety, by a rational and benevolent uſe; to gratify the moſt abſurd avarice, he gave up every enjoyment of it, by marrying an heireſs, the known vanity, imperiouſneſs, and extravagancy of whoſe temper ſo far over-balanced the greatneſs of her wealth, that no man of reaſon or ſpirit, who had any other poſſible way of earning a morſel of bread, would have linked his fate to her.

The conſequence was juſt what he deſerved. The moment he became her huſband, ſhe aſſumed the moſt abſolute authority over him, and all he poſſeſſed, as if the words of their connection had been inverted, and he had made the covenant of duty and obedience to her, and inſtantly ſet up for the patroneſs of merit in the fine arts and ſciences, to ſhew her ſuperiority of genius over the reſt of her ſex.

Such an ambition directly marked her out for a bubble to all the needy ſharping adventurers, who, under the pretence of ſuch merit, fly like locuſts to this fantaſtic people, from every part of the globe, in ſwarms, that literally devour the fruits of the land in ſuch a manner as to ſtarve the natives who are engaged in the ſame purſuits, and thereby diſcourage and prevent their riſing to that excellence, the want of which is objected to them.

For though there may not perhaps be any natural difference between the ſexes in the abilities of mind, neceſſary to form a proper judgment of

any

Digitized by Google

any ſcience, yet the female labours under ſuch diſadvantages from a wrong education, that it is next to impoſſible for a woman to exert the faculties of reaſon in any diſtinguiſhed degree; the time when the ſeeds of knowledge ſhould be ſown being devoted to trifles or abſurdities that deſerve a worſe name, which by theſe means take ſuch poſſeſſion of the mind, as to influence the conduct of the whole life. Some rare inſtances indeed there are, of women, who break through this oppreſſion, and riſe above the prejudices of ſuch an education, to a degree of eminence equal to the foremoſt of the other ſex; but this requires ſuch uncommon ſtrength of genius, as is indulged to a very few; and was by no means the lot of this perſon: All her pretenſions to taſte and judgment being founded on her ability to reward them liberally in others. But even in this, her injudicious vanity has always marred the good effects of her generoſity and wealth; for, not being able herſelf to diſcern real merit, and diſdaining to follow the opinions of others, for fear of paſſing unnoticed among the crowd, ſhe blundered upon the moſt unlucky method of diſtinguiſhing herſelf that ever entered into an human head; for, as if her opinion was of more weight than that of all the world beſide, ſhe ſets up to contradict the voice of the public, and always patronizes thoſe whom they reject and decry.

Such a conduct, as I ſaid, naturally lays her open to the impoſitions of flattery and fraud: Though ſhe profeſſes a taſte for all the finer arts, muſic is the particular object of her favour, and encouragement: As ſoon as a new performer arrives, if he is in diſtreſs, as is almoſt always

Digitized by Google

always the case, he immediately waits upon this lady, to implore her patronage; this necessarily introduces a display of his abilities, which she never fails to reward munificently, and profess her approbation of, but cautiously, and in general terms only, that she may retract it afterwards, should the public unluckily join with her, for her opinion is always in the opposite scale to that of the rest of the world. But if he is disapproved, she takes him under her immediate protection; she invites him constantly to her table, she supplies him with money, with the most boundless profusion, and makes parties among that croud of company, which her wealth and turn for expensive pleasure constantly collect about her, to support him against the favourites of the public; and to shew, that she does this merely from a spirit of contradiction, should the most eminent of these fall off, or be eclipsed by the superior merit of a rival, she instantly forgets the animosities with which she pursued his success, and receives him into her protection and patronage, admiring his grossest faults, and praising the very defects she decried before; while her gentle mate is obliged to submit to this dissipation of his darling wealth, and to be the humble echo of her opinions, in all their various changes, without daring to interpose a word in vindication of his own judgment or authority; but thinking himself happy in being permitted to make use of the pittances of his fortune, which he thus contributes to public charities, to give him the opportunity of assuming the momentary consequence you see.

The many impositions which she has suffered from those rapacious sycophants, would be suf-

Digitized by Google

ficient to make any perſon ſee the folly of ſuch a conduct, who had not wilfully reſolved againſt conviction. I ſhall juſt mention one inſtance; for the groſſneſs and ſingularity of it, and ſo conclude the diſagreeable repreſentation.

To ſhew her elegant taſte in this moſt pleaſing entertainment, and raiſe an opinion of her importance in the polite world, among her tenants and neighbours in the country, whither ſhe retires for the ſummer, ſhe always takes with her ſome of her favourite performers, who cannot fail to pleaſe perſons who never had an opportunity of hearing any better; and ſometimes even will condeſcend, upon very particular occaſions, as when ſhe gives public entertainments, to comply ſo far with the taſte of others, as to ſend for ſome of thoſe who are the higheſt in general repute; though her country-ſeat is almoſt at the extremity of the kingdom; which makes the expence of ſuch a compliment very conſiderable; for ſhe defrays all the charge of travelling, beſides giving a very genteel gratification for the trouble.

Upon an occaſion of this kind, ſome little time ſince, ſhe ſent for a muſician of note, to conduct a concert, which ſhe deſigned to give her neighbours, in the higheſt taſte. The man, finding he had nothing to pay, an unlimited credit being eſtabliſhed for him at every ſtage upon the road, travelled down in the higheſt luxury to her houſe, where his performance was alſo rewarded with a very handſome preſent. But, whether he thought it unequal to his merit and trouble, or imagining that he ſhould never be ſent for thither again, reſolved to make the moſt of the preſent opportunity; upon his return he took

Digitized by Google

took up money at every inn he ſtopped at on the road, upon the credit given him; and, where he lay, conſtantly prevailed upon one of the compliant females, who attended, to ſleep with him, for a conſiderable gratification, which he alſo ordered to be charged to the bill, and left for this lady to pay.

Such an inſult might be thought to merit her reſentment; but as the puniſhing of it would open ſcenes, which muſt lay her under a neceſſity of diſcontinuing her favourite practice of ſending for ſuch perſons, and expoſe her extravagance and taſte to public ridicule and cenſure, ſhe thought proper to overlook it as unnoticed, and pay the bills, without ſeeming to examine into the particulars of them; and to prevent the ſtory's receiving credit, ſhould it happen to be made known, continued to countenance the man, and even invited him into the country, with her the next ſummer, when he played her many tricks of the ſame kind, finding he eſcaped ſo eaſy after this.

I have dealt ſo long upon the characters of this and the former lady, to ſave myſelf trouble upon other occaſions, as their actions afford a general repreſentation of female life.—I mean the lives of thoſe females, who, looking upon themſelves as raiſed above the reſt of their ſex, by rank or fortune, think it neceſſary to ſhew their ſuperiority, by breaking through all the rules which reaſon and religion have eſtabliſhed for their conduct.

How prevailing the force of ſuch examples, the inſtances juſt given ſufficiently ſhew. Indeed, ſuch is the implicit adoration paid to wealth, ſuch is the reigning paſſion, for joining in

Digitized by Google

what is called good company, and partaking of their luxurious entertainments, that, let the rich and great propose any folly and vice, however gross and absurd, as the means of introduction to their tables and parties of pleasure, they will be sure of finding persons enough to comply with their humours. These instances are taken from the most licentious caprices, and absurd vanity of this ambition. The former admit of no excuse; and though the latter may be less blameable in themselves, and even bear a kind of resemblance to virtue in many cases, the success is not much better, nor ever sufficient to justify this ambition in females, to quit the sub-ordinate sphere allotted them by nature, and strive to make a figure in the busier and more extensive province of man.

Nor is this the only useful instruction that may be drawn from a display of these characters. It shews also the ridiculous and unhappy situation into which man falls when he poorly gives up the reins put into his hand by Providence, and submits to the government of a woman, whom he was born to command.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XX.

An irremidable defect in human policy. The history of a most eminent personage. A new way of paying the debts of guardianship. A daughter's disobedience in refusing to comply with more than paternal love. The hero of the tale extracts profit from charity, and asserts the rights of agency, in defiance of public opinion and shame.

TAKE notice of the person immediately below him, whom I have just given you an account of. By his large athletic make, nature seemed to design him for some of the most laborious employments in life; but his genius led him to other pursuits, and made him depend upon the sharpness of his mind, rather than the strength of his body, for his support and advancement in the world.

The depravity of man makes many employments necessary in a community, for public safety and advantage, the execution of which is attended with so many circumstances of horror in the punishment of unhappy delinquents, that no man, who is not destitute of that sympathetic tenderness which is the highest honour of his nature, can bear to undertake them. This throws them upon persons, speculatively speaking, the most unfit for such offices; whose poverty obliges them to practice every iniquity of the profession, into which they were first initiated by vice, and whose hearts are hardened by habit, against every senti-

Digitized by Google

ment of virtue and honour, every finer feeling of nature. Thus the hangman, whose crimes first reduced him to take up the horrid trade, continues it from distress, and puts to death wretched offenders, for facts which he is hourly guilty of himself, without compassion or remorse, till he is detected, and suffers the same punishment from another hand. But this is one of those defects of human policy, which no human heart can remedy.

In an employment not very dissimilar in its nature, though dignified by a less opprobrious name, has this person displayed his abilities, for many years, to the astonishment of all who have been witnesses of his exploits. There is a mystery in such scenes too horrid for representation; I shall therefore pass them over, and barely relate a few anecdotes of his private life, which will sufficiently enable you to form a judgment of his whole character.

A man who, from one of the poorest employments by which a wretched life can be honestly sustained, came unexpectedly to the possession of a considerable fortune, by the death of a relation, who would have suffered him to perish for want of a morsel of bread, had some way conceived such a confidence in this person, that upon his own death, in a very little time after his elevation, he entrusted his orphan daughter to his care, together with what he had been able to save for her, during his short possession of his estate, the inheritance of it passing away, for want of his having male issue, to another branch of the family.

During the minority of his ward, he took care to educate her according to the direction of her father, in a decent but frugal manner, as the fortune she had a right to expect, was not sufficient

Digitized by Google

cient to place her above the neceſſity of induſtry and œconomy; but upon her coming of age, he was obliged to act another part: He had ſpent the greateſt part of her fortune in his pleaſures; for, ſtrange to think! even he had a paſſion for the pleaſures of polite life, and was admitted into the genteeleſt company, to enjoy them, without any enquiry into his character or ſtation, while he was able to bear the expence. Such a ſituation muſt have been diſtreſſing to any other man; but the buſineſs of his profeſſion ſoon ſuggeſted a method of diſengaging himſelf, which his extenſive principles made no objection to his putting in practice.

On the day before ſhe was to receive from him the fortune which was the whole foundation of her future hopes in life, he ſhewed no ſigns of uneaſineſs, but confidently gave her notice, that he deſigned to pay her the moment ſhe was entitled to receive it, and even appointed the other truſtees of the will to meet at his houſe, and be witneſſes to his punctual execution of his truſt. Such a conduct naturally gave ſatisfaction to every perſon concerned, and entirely removed ſome apprehenſion which they had entertained before. But they ſoon found reaſon to change their ſentiments again. For, that very evening he took an occaſion to go through a bye ſtreet, juſt after it became dark, and when he thought himſelf in no danger of being taken notice of, where he rolled himſelf in the kennel, battered his head againſt the ſtones, as if he had received ſeveral ſevere ſtrokes, and ſcattered ſome paper he had in his pocket for that purpoſe, about the ſtreets; and then, in that abuſed appearance, and with all the ſymptoms of affright and deſpair

Digitized by Google

in his looks, run into a neighbouring coffee-houſe, where he told the company, that he had been juſt knocked down and robbed of a conſiderable ſum of money, which he was to pay the next day.

Some of them inſtantly went to the place in which he ſaid this had happened, where they found his hat and wig, and the papers he had left for them, which at firſt gained credit to the ſtory; but when the general tenor of his character, and the circumſtances of his being to pay that ſum the next day, came to be conſidered, the whole artifice was ſeen through, eſpecially as he never offered to prove where he had received the money, nor gave any reaſon for his carrying ſuch a ſum about him, the very bulk and weight of which, (for he ſaid it was all in ſpecie, to prevent too particular an enquiry about bank notes) muſt have been a trouble and incumbrance to him; but barely alledged, that he had always kept the money by him in caſh, ever ſince he had received it: and if any one expreſſed the leaſt doubt of what he ſaid, or deſired to have theſe particulars better explained, he directly charged them with making inſinuations injurious to his character and credit, which he threatened to vindicate by law.

Such a menace, from ſuch a man, was not ineffectual! The injured lady was abſolutely deprived of every means of doing herſelf juſtice; and, as the poor are ever friendleſs, no unconcerned perſon cared to enter into a diſpute with one of his known experience, and who was acquainted with methods of putting his menaces in execution, which the moſt innocent might not find it eaſy to guard againſt; beſides, it was univerſally

Digitized by Google

univerſally and well known, that even if the whole affair could be detected, he was not able to make ſatisfaction. Thus every circumſtance concurred to give ſucceſs to his ſcheme, tho' not quite ſo ſmoothly as he could wiſh; and the poor young lady, having no redreſs, was obliged to return to the low ſtate from which ſhe had ſo lately been raiſed, and in which ſhe ſtill lives a life of ſervitude; happy had ſhe never been flattered with better hopes.

But though he could eſcape the reach of man, divine juſtice was not to be defeated ſo, whoſe vengeance attacked him in ſo ſignal a manner, as plainly ſhewed the juſt retaliation of the unerring hand of Heaven.

Seared as his heart muſt be by ſuch a life, to the more general feelings of humanity, nature was not quite debauched, and he felt the tenderneſs and fond anxiety of paternal love in all its force, for an only daughter, on whoſe education, in all the polite accompliſhments of the more exalted ranks of life, he ſpared neither pains nor expence, ſupporting and adorning her in the genteeleſt manner, and taking evident delight in laviſhing, on ſuch uſes, all that he could acquire by every poſſible means.

Such a conduct, though carried to an exceſs, had ſomething ſo amiable in it, that, in ſome meaſure, it palliated the blacker parts of his character, and even weakened the credit of many of the ſtories told of him. But juſt as he was beginning to enjoy the fruits of his care, by ſeeing his daughter's eminence in the accompliſhments he had taken ſuch pains to teach univerſally acknowledged, an event happened, that not only deprived him of that pleaſure, but alſo turned

Digitized by Google

the merit of all his former fondneſs into the foul-eſt reproach.

His daughter was obſerved, for ſome time, to bear the appearance of the moſt poignant diſtreſs. Whenever ſhe was aſked the cauſe of it, by any of her friends, ſhe would melt into a flood of tears, nor would give any other anſwer, than that ſhe was the moſt miſerable of human beings. This raiſed a variety of conjectures, ſome of which were far from being advantageous to her. But at length the ſecret was revealed. She flew one day, in the utmoſt agony of diſtreſs, to a lady of her acquaintance, who had ſeemed to ſhew the livelieſt ſenſe of her grief, and begged her protection from the cruelty of her father, which, ſhe ſaid, was too great to be borne, ever ſince ſhe had refuſed to gratify an impious paſſion which he had long entertained for her, and which had been the motive of all his care and expence in her education.

Such ſtories are ſo ſhocking to human nature, that they are generally doubted; but his character gave ſuch weight to any charge againſt him, that this was univerſally believed. At firſt he made ſome efforts to induce his daughter to return to him; but ſhe was deaf to his ſolicitations, and being deſtitute of every other means of ſupport, threw herſelf upon the favour of the public, and lives by her ſkill in the accompliſhments which he took ſo much pains to have her taught. This was not only a ſevere mortification to his pride, but alſo made him be looked upon with ſuch horror and deteſtation, that he has been ever ſince ſecluded from the ſociety of every perſon of virtue or reputation.

I ſee

Digitized by Google

I see you wonder at the inconsistency of such a person's appearing in the situation you see him at present, contributing to a public charity, for the relief of the calamities of the poor. To one who can look no farther into man than as he appears at the present moment, such a conduct justly appears unaccountable; but consider, that these are the only places now open for him to mix with persons of character and fortune: for institutions of this kind make no distinctions of persons, but receive, indiscriminately, the benefactions of all who offer. Besides, a genius, so ready as his, can turn every thing to advantage, and extract profit even from giving charity. One instance of this kind of address will prove the justice of this reflection, and shew, that in every action of his life, he really preserves a consistency of character.

Some years ago, *the sea broke over its banks*, in a distant part of the kingdom, and not only laid the country waste for a great extent, but also threatened the ruin of the whole, if some means were not immediately applied to put a stop to it. Such an exigence required instant care; the government sent workmen directly to repair the breach, who were obliged to struggle with all the severities of the season, in a most inhospitable climate to effect their work, it being the depth of winter, and the danger admitting of no delay.

So severe a service naturally excited the compassion of this people, the most humane and generous under Heaven. Accordingly, a public subscription was opened, to buy warm cloathing for *the labourers*, thus employed for the advantage of the public, which met with such general approbation, that a fund sufficient for the purpose was immediately raised. This person, from the

reason.

Digitized by Google

reaſon hinted above, was one of the firſt ſubſcribers, and appeared moſt active in promoting the ſcheme, offering frequently to undertake the moſt troubleſome part of the conduct of it: But ſome of them who were acquainted with his character, abſolutely refuſed to let him interfere in any manner that ſhould give him the leaſt power over the fund. However, as they did not think proper to make the motives of this caution public, he took an opportunity, one day, when they were indiſpenſibly obliged to be abſent, to renew his offer, which his aſſiduity and ſucceſs in ſoliciting ſubſcriptions gave ſuch weight to, that it was received, and he was appointed to purchaſe and ſend down ſome particular articles, that appeared to be immediately wanted, to pay for which, five hundred pounds were directly given into his hands.

This was what he had all along laboured for; accordingly, as ſoon as he received the money, he remitted of his affiduity, and came no more to their meetings, never taking the leaſt care about the things, for the purchaſe of which it had been given to him. So flagrant an act of injuſtice raiſed the reſentment of every one concerned; but that he was prepared for, and deſpiſed; and, when they required him to return the money, he gave them a bill for his own trouble, in which he charged every ſtep he had ever gone, to ſolicit and promote the ſubſcription, and fees of agency for every ſhilling he had received and paid in the courſe of it, by which means he greatly overbalanced their demand.

Bare-faced as ſuch an impoſition was, they had no redreſs; for he had carefully made his charge according to the rates of his profeſſion; and, though

Digitized by Google

though it had been always the intention of every one to beſtow their labour as well as their money, without any lucrative view of return, yet, as he had never entered into an actual engagement to that effect, there was now no poſſibility of defeating his charge.

Such an attempt can never be made with ſucceſs a ſecond time, as the firſt inſtance raiſes a general alarm. However, he ſtill perſiſts to join in every thing of the kind that is propoſed, in hopes of ſeizing ſome ſuch lucky opportunity as he did before. But it is eaſy to foreſee that he will be diſappointed, for though he exerts himſelf ſo ſtrenuouſly, and takes upon him to offer his advice and direction, as you ſee, the prejudice againſt him is ſo ſtrong, that every thing he ſays is ſuſpected of deſign, every thing he propoſes rejected, even without examining. Nay, ſo ſtrong is the deteſtation of him grown, ſince this affair of his daughter, that ſome ſocieties have refuſed him admiſſion, and others even gone ſo far, as to expel him, in the moſt ignominious manner, from among them.

CHAP. XXI.

The repreſentation concluded with an eminent man-midwife. His motives for taking up that profeſſion, with ſome unfortunate anecdotes of his practice.

I SHALL now preſent you with a character, the folly of which is a ſhade to its virtues, and ſhews them through a medium of ridicule and

and contempt, more humbling to human vanity than the moſt atrocious vice.

Obſerve that ſkeleton, that figure of famine, who even after a feaſt looks as if he had faſted for a month, and was juſt ready to periſh for want. That is another of the principal promoters, and indeed, ſupporters of public charity, from the beſt of motives: his benefactions always flowing from the benevolence of his heart, though too often qualified in the manner by circumſtances that throw both the gift and giver into ridicule.

For ſuch is the vehemence of his temper, that, not ſatisfied with providing for the wants of the poor, he will ſee that the ſupplies which he beſtows are applied in the manner he directs, which introduces him too familiarly into the domeſtic diſtreſſes of the unhappy, many of whom would rather periſh for want, than make the circumſtances of their wants known: nor is his fortune only devoted to thoſe uſes, his very perſonal ſervice is always ready, particularly in ſome caſes, where, unfortunately, a motive of a very different nature from his real one is liable to be miſtaken for it, by the malignant temper of the times.

There is no ſituation of human diſtreſs that calls ſo ſtrongly for compaſſion and relief, as child-birth. How ſevere then muſt the caſe of thoſe unhappy creatures be, who are left to ſtruggle thro' ſuch pangs, unaſſiſted, unprovided with any of the comforts, ſo neceſſary to ſupport nature in ſuch a conflict.

A ſenſe of this ſtruck his humane heart! He felt the diſtreſs, and liberally ſupplied the relief. Well had he ſtopped here! But fearing that ſuch relief ſhould be miſapplied, or inſufficient, he would attend himſelf, to ſee that nothing was wanted;

Digitized by Google

wanted; and at length, to make his assistance complete, learned the *obstetric* art, and now necessarily has more business in it, as he pays for being employed, by the benefactions he bestows, than any one member of the profession.

Laudable as this care, and the motive of it are, it would have been much better, had not the sanguineness of his temper hurried him so far! Had he been content to supply their wants, and let others, whose profession it more immediately is, administer relief. For now, what a field does it open for ill-natured ridicule, to see a man of his consequence descend to offices, in the ordinary acceptation of the world, so far beneath him? How easy is it to say! How easy to be believed, that idle curiosity, or some grosser motive, prompts to such uncommon assiduity?

Nor is the evil of this indiscretion confined to him alone; it reflects a kind of ridicule upon the very virtue it would serve; and make less sanguine minds refrain from the good, for fear they should also share in the reproach. For it is not sufficient for a man to have the testimony of his own conscience for the rectitude of his intentions; there is also a debt of appearance due to the public, to avoid offence, and inculcate virtue by example.

One instance will illustrate this, and shew the inconveniences of his inconsiderate zeal.

A poor woman applied to him for relief some time before the moment. According to his custom, he supplied her necessities, and took a direction where to call and see her. The woman, either mistaken herself, or tempted by distress to deceive him, told him a wrong time, which made him come too soon; and, as he always made

Digitized by Google

made her some charitable present whenever he came, she still found some complaints to induce him to repeat his visits.

At length, the frequency of his coming took the notice of the alley in which she lived, who could not conceive any honest business that a gentleman of his fine appearance could have with such a poor woman, in so obscure a place; and, as such remarks are always improved, some *friend* hinted to the woman's husband, a labouring man who was out at his work all day, and therefore could not be witness of his disgrace, that his wife had *many* improper visitors come to her, and must certainly have taken to bad courses, to encourage such doings.

The cuckold in imagination went directly home in the greatest rage at his dishonour, but the name of the visitor, and an assurance that there came no other, soon pacified him, especially as a ready thought struck him, that he might turn the good man's humanity to an advantage, of a nature very different from what he designed; for the fellow was well supplied with what is called *mother-wit*, which want had sharpened, and freed from every restraint of honesty. He therefore sullenly told his wife, that it might be so as she said, but he would have a better proof than her word for it, and therefore she must let him see her visitor the next time he came, and, as she valued her life, assent to every thing which he, her husband, should do or say.

The readiness of her consent encouraged him to open his design to her, which her nuptial obedience, and hopes of gain, made her not only give into, but she also improved the scheme to a certainty of success.

The

Digitized by Google

The husband accordingly, having prepared some of his associates, placed them properly, the next time the gentleman went to visit his wife, who immediately, upon his coming into the room, began to *cry out*, and implore his assistance.

Though the business came a little inconveniently upon him, as he was full dressed, he would not desert her in her distress, but directly set about giving her the necessary assistance, in the hurry of which, some unluckly stoop burst the string that tied his breeches behind, and down they fell about his heels.

Though this disaster disconcerted him a good deal, the cries of his patient would not give him time to adjust himself, but he was proceeding in his business, with the most anxious assiduity: when in rushed the husband, with his gang, and rewarded his care with a stroke that felled him, fettered as he was in his breeches, to the ground.

The scene was now changed! the woman no longer in labour, cried only for revenge, *on the base man who had attempted her virtue*, as the witnesses present attested they had heard her before, and now caught him in the very fact; which the posture he was in, and, above all, the circumstance of his breeches, too strongly confirmed, to the crowd whom the noise had drawn together.

Terrified almost to death at the threats of the enraged husband, who could hardly be held from taking personal vengeance that very moment, and sensible of the consequence, should public fame catch hold of such a tale, the poor *criminal* threw himself on his knees, and, convinced that all vindication of his innocence would be in vain, besought only a composition for his offence.

This

Digitized by Google

This was just what the parties wanted; but still to increase his terrors, and inhance the price of his escape, such difficulties were raised, as made him glad to yield to any terms they could impose; and, accordingly, he not only purged himself of having done any actual dishonour to her husband, for the intention they would not admit him to controvert, but also made satisfaction to his resentment for the attempt, with 100*l.* for which, as he had not a sum immediately about him, he gave a draught on his banker, and waited in *duresse*, till the arrival of it released him.

This misfortune made him more cautious for some time; but he begins to forget it now, and goes on *with his business* as before. One thing, indeed, he takes sufficient care about, and that is, that the waist of his breeches is properly secured: for so strong is the impression, which that accident made upon him, that he never walks a dozen steps without pulling them up.

You see most of them begin to nod, I shall therefore draw the curtain here, and leave them to their nap, with this observation, that a few such examples as the clergyman, and many of the kind there are, particularly eminent in this exalted virtue of charity, in both the sexes, are sufficient to take off the prejudice which the others must excite, and to preserve the proper respect to principles they propose to imitation.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XXII.

Some account of the officers of the charity. Their care of themſelves. They fall out about the diviſion of the ſpoil. A terrible uproar is appeaſed by a demand of general concern. The conciſe manner of paſſing public accounts. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

WHEN I had taken a ſufficient view of the governors, I had leiſure to turn my obſervations to the ſervants of the ſociety, whoſe behaviour raiſed an indignation too ſtrong to be expreſſed by words.

If the governors feaſted, they paid for their feaſting; but the ſervants feaſted no leſs, and were paid for it! Nor was this enormity confined to this day; their whole time was one continued ſcene of it, and much the greater part of the contributions of the public was proſtituted to this abominable abuſe: while the poor, for whoſe relief they were given, too often languiſhed in want of the meaneſt neceſſaries, the fund being inſufficient for their wants, and the luxury and wages of their ſervants.

I was diverted from theſe reflections, by an uproar, in one of the private apartments of the houſe, where ſome of the ſuperior ſervants had got together over a bottle of wine, to ſettle their reſpective dividends of the ſubſcriptions of the day. I call them ſervants, for that is the proper appellation of all who ſerve for hire. As I was yet undiſpoſed of, to any particular perſon, I had it in my power, as I have told you before, to range

Digitized by Google

range through the whole territories of the ſociety to which I belonged, and therefore flew to ſee what might be the cauſe of this riot, in ſo improper a place, where I was witneſs to ſuch a ſcene as almoſt tranſcends belief.

At the upper end of the table ſat the *treaſurer* (for it would be a reproach to the pooreſt ſociety to have fewer officers than the ſtate) with his accounts before him. After a bumper to the ſucceſs of the charity. 'Mr. Steward (ſaid he) 'our ſubſcriptions have been ſo good this year, 'that I think we may venture to enlarge our 'ſalaries, a little; for laſt year they were really 'ſcarce worth a gentleman's acceptance.

'That is true (replied the ſteward) and I be-'lieve we may enlarge the houſe allowance too, 'for, upon the preſent eſtabliſhment, it is hardly 'enough for the days we meet here, and will 'not afford any thing to carry home, to enter-'tain a friend with, as a gentleman would de-'ſire:—it is but ſwelling ſome of the *ſick arti-'cles*, which at preſent are ſcarce above the 'conſumption. When I was overſeer of the 'pariſh, we managed things better. We then 'lived like gentlemen: nay, I remember when 'I was church-warden, that we ſpent the whole 'ſummer, jaunting about the country, in purſuit 'of a gentleman, who had a child ſworn to him; 'for fifty-ſhillings, which he had been ordered to 'pay, till the bill of our expences came to 15 *l.* 'and yet no-body could ſay againſt it: ſo that it 'is our own fault, if we do not live well.

'Right (joined the apothecary) nor was the 'appointment for medicines any way ſufficient. 'Had half what the phyſicians preſcribed been 'given, there would have been nothing to be

'got

'got by the contract.'—'How, Mr. Apothe-
'cary (returned the cook with a ſneer) nothing
'to be got! pray, was not all you got clear
'gain? I am ſure, from the benefit received by
'the patients, there did not appear to have been
'any thing above brick-duſt, or powder of rot-
'ten poſt, in any of the ſtuffs they took!

'Pray S—S—Sir (ſtuttered the apothecary,
'in a rage) wh--wh--what's that you ſay? Who
'm—m—made you a judge of medicines!'—
'Not you, I thank God, Sir, (ſaid the cook) as
'my health ſhews. But I have a good reaſon
'for what I ſay; for tho' I put double the quan-
'tity of meat in my broth, I could not prevent
'the people's dying, nor make the few who re-
'covered, able to go out in twice the uſual time.
'—S—S—Sir, 'tis all a d—d—dam'd lie.
'Their d—d—dying was occaſioned by the
'p—p—poorneſs of the b—b—broth, and
'the badneſs of their p—p—proviſions, and
'not by the w—w—want of medicines; and
'I'll p—p—prove it, Sir: and how you ſup—
'p—p—orted your family on the m—m—meat
'that ſhould have been d—d—dreſſed for the
'ſick!'——'You'll prove it, Sir! Take care
'that you do! Gentlemen! take notice of
'what he ſays! This is ſtriking at my charac-
'ter; and muſt affect my bread.'

'That is true, Mr. Cook (ſaid the ſecretary,
'who had been an attorney's clerk) and what-
'ever ſtrikes at a man's character, ſo as to affect
'his bread, is actionable.'——'B—b—but,
'Sir, he attacked my ch—cha—character firſt,
'and I'll b—b—b—bring my action too.'——
'So you may, Sir, (replied the lawyer) the ac-
'tion will lie on both ſides.'——

The

The diſpute had hitherto been kept up with ſuch heat, that the company could not interpoſe a word to pacify them, but the mention of the law made it every one's concern in a moment.—'Silence, Gentlemen (ſaid the treaſurer, raiſing 'ſlowly his auguſt bulk, and ſtriking his hand 'upon the table) Silence, I ſay, and let me hear 'no more of this brawling. Mr. Cook! Mr. 'Apothecary! what do you both mean? To 'diſcover the ſecrets of our ſociety, and to blow 'us all up at once? You both heard me ſay, 'that every thing, which was wrong ſhould be 'adjuſted! Could you not wait for that, with-'out falling into this indecent, this unprofitable 'wrangle? As for you, Mr. Secretary, the leven 'of your profeſſion will break out; it is ſuf-'ficient to infect the whole maſs! Is this your 'promiſe, your oath? to follow your buſineſs, 'and do as you are ordered, quietly and impli-'citly, without meddling any farther, or perplex-'ing us with the tricks of your former trade? 'But it was in vain to expect it. A lawyer 'can as well live without food, as without fo-'menting quarrels, and ſetting his neighbours 'together by the ears: bring an action indeed! 'and ſo betray our myſtery, to the impertinent 'remarks of counſellors, and the ſcoffs of Tem-'plers and attorneys clerks. Let me hear one 'word more of the kind, and this moment I de-'clare off all connection, and leave every man 'to ſhift for himſelf. Our general oath of ſe-'crecy, atteſted under our hands, ſecures me 'from information, as it would invalidate the 'teſtimony of us all.'

With theſe words, he turned about, to leave the room, when the ſteward, catching him by the

the breaſt, pulled him into his chair, and holding him down, *by main force*, addreſſed him thus; ——'Good God, Sir! what do you mean! to 'take notice of the warmth of madmen, who 'know not what they ſay: you Mr. Treaſurer, 'have moved in an higher ſphere of life, and 'ought to be above ſuch things. *You* were not 'raiſed from the cleaning the ſhoes of a petti-'fogging attorney, in whoſe drudgery you loſt 'your ears! from being ſcullion in a nobleman's 'kitchen, or ſervant of a mountebank, to diſ-'penſe his packets to the mob; *you* were not 'raiſed, I ſay, from any of theſe ſtations to 'the rank of a gentleman, by this office, and 'ſhould be above taking offence at the low-'lived behaviour of ſuch creatures, who know 'no better.'——'Nor w—w—w—was I a 'full-handed ten-times b—b—b—bankrupt '(interrupted the apothecary, as he would have 'done ſooner, had rage left him power of ut-'terance) that b—b—b—being unable to get 'credit any l—l—l—longer, came from cheat-'ing the p—p—p—public, to cheating the 'p—p—p—poor! nor a c—c—c—caſt off, 'worn out p—p—p—pimping footman, whoſe 'dirty ſervices w—w—were rewarded with this 'place.'

This made the madneſs general, and they were juſt going to proceed to blows, when the porter entered haſtily, and told them the committee were adjourned to their chamber, and ſent for their accounts, to ſit upon them directly.

This brought them all to their ſenſes, and made them friends in a moment. 'Gentlemen, '(ſaid the treaſurer) we have all been too hot, 'all to blame; but let there be no more of it! 'let

Digitized by Google

'let us agree among ourſelves, and we may de-
'fy the world.'

Upon this a general ſhake of the hand put an end to the whole conteſt, and they proceeded to buſineſs, as if no ſuch thing had ever happened, unanimous in their endeavours to cheat the public, and fatten on the ſpoils of the poor.

By that time the committee had ſmoaked a pipe, and drank their coffee, the accounts were laid before them, over which they nodded a few moments, and then paſſed them without exceptions. The next thing was to pay the ſalaries of the officers, in which diſtribution it fell to my lot to be given to the chaplain.

END of the FIRST VOLUME.

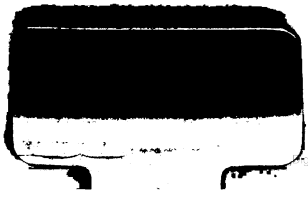
Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google


Digitized by Google

Google